



ESL EASY READ

LEITURA FACILITADA EM INGLÊS

NÍVEL
B1

The Son of Tarzan

Edgar Rice Burroughs



1 NÍVEL DE
LEITURA

B1



TEXTO
ORIGINAL
EM INGLÊS



TRADUÇÃO
EM PORTUGUÊS



NOTAS E
GLOSSÁRIO
DE VOCABULÁRIO

O Filho de Tarzan

TRADUÇÃO EM PORTUGUÊS

APRENDA • LEIA • ENTENDA • PROGRIDA



→ DO NÍVEL **B1** AO TEXTO ORIGINAL ←

LEITURA INTELIGENTE, COMPREENSÃO REAL, PROGRESSO CONSTANTE.

The Son of Tarzan

O Filho de Tarzan

Edgar Rice Burroughs

ESL Easy Read

Reading Comprehension B1 • Original Text • Português
Support

SAMPLE

Contents

[Copyright](#)

[Introduction](#)

[Reading Comprehension B1](#)

[Original English Text](#)

[Versão em Português](#)

[Glossary: New Words](#)

Copyright

Fonte original - domínio público

Esta edição ESL Easy Read foi adaptada a partir de The Son of Tarzan, de Edgar Rice Burroughs, publicado originalmente em 1915.

A obra original encontra-se em domínio público e pode ser utilizada, reproduzida, distribuída e adaptada de acordo com a legislação aplicável.

Autor

Edgar Rice Burroughs (1875 - 1950)

Estados Unidos

Esta obra foi publicada originalmente em 1915.

Nos Estados Unidos, obras publicadas antes de 1930 encontram-se normalmente em domínio público.

Com base no ano de publicação disponível, esta obra encontra-se em domínio público nos Estados Unidos desde 1º de janeiro de 2011.

Brasil

Autor: Edgar Rice Burroughs (1875 - 1950)

De acordo com a Lei nº 9.610/1998, os direitos patrimoniais expiram 70 anos após a morte do autor, contados a partir de 1º de janeiro do ano seguinte ao falecimento.

Edgar Rice Burroughs faleceu em 1950.

Situação no Brasil: DOMÍNIO PÚBLICO.

Portugal

Autor: Edgar Rice Burroughs (1875 - 1950)

De acordo com o Código do Direito de Autor e dos Direitos Conexos, a proteção patrimonial dura 70 anos após a morte do autor.

Edgar Rice Burroughs faleceu em 1950.

Situação em Portugal: DOMÍNIO PÚBLICO.

Dados da publicação original

Obra original: The Son of Tarzan

Autor: Edgar Rice Burroughs

Primeira publicação: 1915

Local: United States

Primeiro editor: All-Story Weekly (serial); A. C. McClurg & Co. (1917 first book edition)

Verifique você mesmo

As fontes abaixo permitem verificar gratuitamente a identificação da obra, a data de publicação e, no caso do Project Gutenberg, o status de domínio público nos Estados Unidos:

→ **Project Gutenberg** — <https://www.gutenberg.org/ebooks/90>

O registro do Project Gutenberg identifica esta obra como domínio público nos Estados Unidos.

→ **Internet Archive** — https://archive.org/details/isbn_093080808

Preserva digitalizações e registros bibliográficos de edições impressas da obra original.

Esta adaptação ESL Easy Read

Nenhum direito autoral é reivindicado sobre o texto original em domínio público. A estrutura editorial desta edição, as versões de leitura simplificada, as traduções de apoio, o layout, a capa e o aparato pedagógico são protegidos por direitos autorais.

© 2026 MicMac from Las Vegas LLC. Todos os direitos reservados.

Introdução

Como ler este livro

Cada livro desta coleção é apresentado em um nível de leitura simplificada, de acordo com o CEFR - Quadro Europeu Comum de Referência para Línguas.

A2 - Básico: indicado para leitores que já compreendem frases simples, vocabulário frequente e textos curtos sobre situações do cotidiano.

B1 - Intermediário: indicado para leitores que conseguem compreender as ideias principais de textos claros e acompanhar uma narrativa com vocabulário e estruturas de dificuldade moderada.

B2 - Intermediário avançado: indicado para leitores que já conseguem compreender textos mais complexos, acompanhar descrições detalhadas e reconhecer uma variedade maior de vocabulário e estruturas gramaticais.

Este livro foi adaptado para o nível B1.

Você pode começar a lê-lo mesmo sem dominar completamente o inglês. O texto foi simplificado para facilitar a compreensão, preservando a história, os personagens, o ambiente e os principais acontecimentos da obra original.

O objetivo não é substituir a obra original, mas criar uma passagem gradual entre o inglês que você já conhece e a linguagem literária do texto completo.

Como usar En/Pt

No texto simplificado em inglês, En/Pt abre a página correspondente.

A página En/Pt apresenta três camadas independentes, sempre nesta ordem: a tradução em português do texto simplificado; o trecho correspondente do original em inglês; e a tradução em português do original.

No texto original em inglês, Pt abre diretamente o mesmo parágrafo na versão portuguesa. Nessa versão, En retorna ao mesmo parágrafo no

texto original em inglês. Na página [En/Pt, Original English](#) retorna de Original Português ao mesmo parágrafo original.

Como usar o glossário

As palavras e expressões incluídas no glossário são marcadas no texto. Clique ou selecione uma delas para abrir a entrada correspondente.

Cada entrada apresenta:

- a palavra ou expressão original em inglês;
- a sua pronúncia fonética;
- a tradução em português;
- um exemplo de uso em português;
- um exemplo de uso em inglês;
- até seis trechos do livro em que a palavra ou expressão aparece, ou todos os trechos disponíveis quando houver menos de seis ocorrências.

Cada ocorrência apresentada no glossário inclui um link direto para o ponto exato do livro em que a palavra ou expressão foi usada.

Depois de consultar uma ocorrência, o leitor pode retornar diretamente ao ponto do texto de onde abriu o glossário ou navegar para qualquer outra ocorrência da mesma palavra ou expressão dentro do livro.

A função da tradução em português

Procuramos oferecer traduções em português claras, naturais e literariamente agradáveis, tanto para o texto simplificado quanto para o texto original.

Ainda assim, a tradução deve ser entendida apenas como instrumento de apoio. Este livro não foi concebido para ser lido principalmente em português: seu objetivo é ajudar você a ler em inglês e recorrer ao português somente quando necessário.

Sempre que possível, tente primeiro compreender o trecho em inglês. Consulte a tradução para confirmar o sentido, esclarecer uma dificuldade ou comparar estruturas; depois, retorne ao texto em inglês.

Sobre este livro

Jack Clayton, filho de Tarzan, cresce na Inglaterra sem conhecer o passado do pai na selva, até que o velho macaco Akut, levado à Europa, desperta nele o lado selvagem. Fugindo de casa, retorna à África com Akut e recebe o nome Korak, o Matador. Livre e feroz, Korak salva Meriem, uma menina árabe maltratada, e os dois crescem juntos na natureza, formando um vínculo profundo. Separados pelo infortúnio e ameaçados por traficantes de escravos e feras, enfrentam longas provas, enquanto Tarzan e Jane procuram desesperadamente o filho. As origens nobres ocultas de Meriem são reveladas pouco a pouco. Pela coragem e dedicação, Korak reencontra Meriem e sua família e escolhe o amor e a vida na selva que tornou sua.

Contato

MicMac from Las Vegas LLC

Contato: admin@esleasyread.com

Outros livros disponíveis na série ESL Easy Read

Conheça também os outros livros disponíveis, organizados por coleção:

Coleção A Selva de Burroughs:

- Jungle Tales of Tarzan
- Tarzan and the Ant Men
- Tarzan and the City of Gold
- Tarzan and the Golden Lion
- Tarzan and the Jewels of Opar
- Tarzan and the Lost Empire
- Tarzan at the Earth's core
- Tarzan of the Apes
- Tarzan the Invincible
- Tarzan the Terrible
- Tarzan the Untamed
- Tarzan Triumphant
- Tarzan, Lord of the Jungle

The Son of Tarzan

- The Beasts of Tarzan
- The Return of Tarzan
- The Son of Tarzan
- The Tarzan Twins

Coleção Adventure:

- Kim
- Martin Eden
- The Call of the Wild
- The Jungle Book
- The Sea-Wolf
- White Fang

Coleção Alice in Wonderland:

- Alice's Adventures in Wonderland
- ALICE'S ADVENTURES UNDER GROUND
- Through the Looking-Glass, and What Alice Found There

Coleção Anne of Green Gables:

- Anne of Avonlea
- Anne of Green Gables
- Anne of the Island
- Anne's House of Dreams
- Further Chronicles of Avonlea
- Kilmeny of the Orchard
- Rainbow Valley
- Rilla of Ingleside
- The Golden Road

Coleção Charles Dickens:

- A Christmas Carol in Prose Being a Ghost Story of Christmas
- A Tale of Two Cities

Coleção Classics:

- Ivanhoe

- Little Women; Or, Meg, Jo, Beth, and Amy
- Middlemarch
- Moby Dick; Or, The Whale
- North and South
- Peter Pan (Peter and Wendy)
- Tess of the d'Urbervilles: A Pure Woman
- The Blue Castle: a novel
- The Enchanted April
- The Great Gatsby
- The Green Mummy
- The Woman in White
- Uncle Tom's Cabin or Life among the Lowly

Coleção Doctor Dolittle:

- Doctor Dolittle in the Moon
- Doctor Dolittle's Caravan
- Doctor Dolittle's Circus
- Doctor Dolittle's Post Office
- The Story of Doctor Dolittle
- The Voyages of Doctor Dolittle

Coleção Gothic and Terror:

- Dracula
- Frankenstein
- THE FALL OF THE HOUSE OF USHER
- The Mysteries of Udolpho
- The Picture of Dorian Gray
- THE STRANGE CASE OF DR. JEKYLL AND MR. HYDE

Coleção H. G. Wells:

- The First Men in the Moon
- The Invisible Man
- The Island of Doctor Moreau
- The Time Machine

- The War of the Worlds

Coleção Jules Verne:

- A Journey to the Centre of the Earth
- Around the World in Eighty Days
- Five Weeks in a Balloon
- Off on a Comet a Journey through Planetary Space
- Robur the Conqueror
- The Giant Raft
- The Mysterious Island
- Twenty Thousand Leagues under the Sea

Coleção Mark Twain:

- A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court
- The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn
- The Adventures of Tom Sawyer
- The Prince and the Pauper
- Tom Sawyer Abroad
- Tom Sawyer, Detective

Coleção Marte de Burroughs:

- A Fighting Man of Mars
- A Princess of Mars
- The Chessmen of Mars
- The Gods of Mars
- The Master Mind of Mars
- The Warlord of Mars
- Thuvia, Maid of Mars

Coleção Sherlock Holmes:

- His Last Bow
- The Adventures of Sherlock Holmes
- The Casebook of Sherlock Holmes
- The Hound of the Baskervilles

- The Memoirs of Sherlock Holmes
- The Return of Sherlock Holmes
- The Sign of the Four
- The Valley of Fear

Coleção The Land of Oz:

- Glinda of Oz
- Ozma of Oz
- Rinkitink in Oz
- The Emerald City of Oz
- The Lost Princess of Oz
- The Magic of Oz
- The Marvelous Land of Oz
- The Patchwork Girl of Oz
- The Road to Oz
- The Scarecrow of Oz
- The Tin Woodman of Oz
- The Woggle-Bug Book
- The Wonderful Wizard of Oz
- Tik-Tok of Oz

www.esleasyread.com

Index - Reading Comprehension B1

[Chapter 1](#)

[Chapter 2](#)

[Chapter 3](#)

[Chapter 4](#)

[Chapter 5](#)

Chapter 1

En/Pt The long boat of the Marjorie W. floated down the wide Ugambi with the tide and current. The crew rested after hard work rowing upstream. Three miles below them, the Marjorie W. waited for them to return and raise the long boat onto its davits. Soon, all the men looked away from their talking and daydreaming toward the north bank. There, a strange man stood screaming at them in a cracked high voice, with thin arms stretched out.

En/Pt "What the hell?" one of the crew said.

En/Pt "A white man!" the mate muttered, then said, "Man the oars, boys, and we'll row over and see what he wants."

En/Pt When they came near the shore, they saw a very thin creature with a few white hairs tangled and dirty. He was naked except for a loin cloth. Tears ran down his hollow, pockmarked cheeks. He talked to them in a strange language.

En/Pt "Russian," guessed the mate. "Do you understand English?" he called to the man.

En/Pt He did, and in broken English he begged them to take him away from that terrible country. Once he was on the Marjorie W., the stranger told them a sad story of hunger, hardship, and torture that had lasted ten years. He did not say how he had come to Africa. The men thought he had forgotten his life before those terrible years. He also did not tell them his real name, so they knew him only as Michael Sabrov. He looked nothing like the strong but dishonest Alexis Paulvitch he had once been.

En/Pt It had been ten years since the Russian escaped death while his friend Rokoff died. Many times during those years, Paulvitch cursed his fate. He wished he had died instead of suffering so much.

En/Pt Paulvitch ran into the jungle when he saw Tarzan's beasts and their savage master swarm over the deck of the Kincaid. Afraid that Tarzan would follow and catch him, he kept stumbling deeper into the jungle. At last, he fell into the hands of a savage cannibal tribe that had already known Rokoff's cruelty. For some strange reason, the chief saved Paulvitch from death, but only to give him a life of misery and torture. For ten years he was the tribe's victim. Women and children beat him and

threw stones at him. Warriors cut him, slashed him, and scarred him. He also suffered many deadly fevers. Still, he did not die. Smallpox attacked him too, leaving ugly marks on his body. Because of the tribe and all these horrors, Alexis Paulvitch's face changed so much that even his own mother would not have known him. His thick dark hair became a few thin yellow-white strands. His arms and legs bent strangely, and he walked in a weak, shuffling way, with his body bent forward. His teeth were gone, knocked out by his savage masters. Even his mind was only a shadow of what it had once been.

En/Pt They took him aboard the Marjorie W. and fed him and cared for him. He grew a little stronger, but his looks never improved. They had found a ruined human being, and that is what he remained until death. Though he was still only in his thirties, Alexis Paulvitch could have been taken for an eighty-year-old man. Nature had made him suffer more than the man who had helped him in crime.

En/Pt Alexis Paulvitch did not think about revenge. He only felt a dull hate for the man that he and Rokoff had tried and failed to destroy. He also hated the memory of Rokoff, because Rokoff had led him into these horrors. He hated the police in many cities, because he had had to run from them. He hated law, order, and almost everything else. Every waking moment was filled with sick, bitter hate. Inside, he had become as ugly as he looked outside. He had little to do with the men who saved him. He was too weak to work and too bitter for company, so they soon left him alone.

En/Pt The Marjorie W. was hired by a group of rich manufacturers. It was fitted with a laboratory and a team of scientists. They were sent to find a natural product that the manufacturers had been buying from South America at a very high cost. No one on the ship knew what the product was except the scientists. This does not matter to us, except that it led the ship to an island off the coast of Africa after Alexis Paulvitch came aboard.

En/Pt The ship stayed anchored off the coast for several weeks. Life on board became dull and hard for the crew. They often went ashore, and at last Paulvitch asked to go with them. He was also tired of the same boring life on the ship.

En/Pt The island was thick with trees, and heavy jungle grew almost to the beach. The scientists went far inland, searching for the valuable thing that local stories had promised might be found there in large amounts. The crew fished, hunted, and explored. Paulvitch walked up and down the beach, or lay in the shade of the big trees near it. One day the men were nearby, looking at the body of a panther killed by one of them during a hunt inland. Paulvitch was sleeping under a tree when a hand touched his shoulder. He woke with a start and saw a huge ape sitting beside him and studying him closely. He was very frightened. He looked toward the sailors, but they were a couple of hundred yards away. The ape touched his shoulder again and made soft, pleading sounds. Paulvitch saw no threat in its eyes or in its posture. He slowly stood up, and the ape rose beside him.

En/Pt Bent over, the man carefully shuffled away toward the sailors. The ape moved with him and took one of his arms. They were almost to the small group of men before anyone saw them, and by then Paulvitch was sure the beast meant no harm. The animal seemed used to being around people. Paulvitch then thought the ape was worth a lot of money, and before they reached the sailors he had decided he should be the one to gain from it.

En/Pt When the men looked up and saw the strange pair coming toward them, they were amazed and ran to meet them. The ape showed no fear. Instead, he grabbed each sailor by the shoulder and looked closely into his face. After he had examined them all, he went back to Paulvitch, looking very disappointed.

En/Pt The men liked the ape. They gathered around Paulvitch and asked many questions. They looked at his companion. Paulvitch said the ape was his. He did not say anything else. He repeated, "The ape is mine. The ape is mine." One man got tired of Paulvitch. He decided to play a joke. He went behind the ape and poked it with a pin. The ape turned around very fast. In a moment, the friendly animal became a very angry monster. The sailor was smiling, but then he became very scared. He tried to avoid the ape's long arms. He did not succeed. He took a long knife from his belt. The ape took the knife from him and threw it away. Then it bit the sailor on the shoulder with its yellow teeth.

En/Pt The man's companions attacked the ape with sticks and knives. Paulvitch jumped around the angry, cursing group, begging, screaming,

and threatening them. He saw his hopes of riches quickly disappearing before the sailors' weapons.

En/Pt But the ape was not easy to defeat, even against so many attackers. He rose from the sailor who had started the fight, shook his huge shoulders, and threw off two men who were holding his back. Then he knocked down one attacker after another with hard blows from his open hands. He moved quickly from place to place, like a small monkey.

En/Pt The captain and mate had seen the fight when they were landing from the Marjorie W. Paulvitch saw them running toward the scene with revolvers drawn, followed by the two sailors who had brought them ashore. The ape stood looking at the damage he had caused, and Paulvitch could not tell if he was ready to attack again or choosing whom to kill first. What Paulvitch did know was that if the officers got close enough, they would soon shoot the beast unless something was done quickly. The ape had not attacked Paulvitch, but the Russian still was not sure what would happen if he tried to stop the angry animal, now wild with rage and smelling fresh blood. He hesitated for a moment, then thought again of the wealth this great ape could bring if he were safely taken to a big city like London.

En/Pt The captain was now shouting for Paulvitch to move aside so he could shoot the animal. Instead, Paulvitch shuffled to the ape's side. His hair trembled with fear, but he forced himself to stay calm and took hold of the ape's arm.

En/Pt "Come!" he ordered, and pulled the beast away from the sailors. Many of them were now sitting up in scared surprise or crawling away from their conqueror on hands and knees.

En/Pt Slowly the ape allowed itself to be led aside, and it showed no sign of wanting to harm the Russian. The captain stopped a few steps away from the strange pair.

En/Pt "Move aside, Sabrov!" he ordered. "I'll put that brute where he can't bite any more able seamen."

En/Pt "It was not his fault, captain," Paulvitch said. "Please do not shoot him. The men started the fight. They attacked him first. He is very gentle, and he is mine! I will not let you kill him." His confused mind

thought again about the pleasures that money could buy in London. He could not have that money without something lucky like the ape.

En/Pt The captain lowered his weapon. "The men started it, did they?" he said. "Is that so?" Then he turned to the sailors, who had by now gotten back to their feet. None of them was badly hurt except the man who had started the trouble, and he would likely have a sore shoulder for a week or so.

En/Pt "Simpson did it," one of the men said. "He stuck a pin into the monkey from behind, and the monkey caught him. It served him right. And the monkey also got the rest of us. I cannot blame him because we all attacked him at the same time."

En/Pt The captain looked at Simpson, who shyly admitted it was true. Then the captain went to the ape, as if he wanted to see the beast's temper for himself, but he kept his revolver cocked and aimed. He spoke kindly to the animal, who sat beside the Russian and looked from one sailor to another. As the captain came near, the ape half stood and moved toward him. He had the same strange, searching look he had shown before with the sailors. He came very close and put a paw on the man's shoulder, studying his face for a long time. Then he seemed disappointed and gave almost a human sigh. He turned to look closely at the mate and the two sailors who had come with the officers. Each time he sighed and moved on, and at last he returned to Paulvitch and sat down beside him again. After that, he showed little or no interest in the other men and seemed to have forgotten the fight.

En/Pt When the party returned to the Marjorie W., Paulvitch was with the ape, and the ape seemed eager to follow him. The captain did not stop this, so the big ape was quietly accepted as part of the ship's crew. Once aboard, he studied every new face very closely and showed the same disappointment each time. The officers and scientists often talked about him, but they could not explain the strange way he greeted every new person. If he had been found on land, they might have thought he had once been a person's pet. But that idea did not fit, since his island was empty and cut off from the world. He always seemed to be looking for someone. During the first days of the trip back, he was often found nosing around different parts of the ship. But after he had seen everyone and explored every corner, he became completely uninterested in all around him. Even the Russian got only a passing look when he brought

food. At other times, the ape seemed only to put up with him. He never showed affection for Paulvitch or for anyone else on the Marjorie W., and he never again showed the savage anger that had appeared when the sailors first attacked him.

En/Pt It spent most of its time at the front of the ship, looking ahead at the horizon. It seemed to know that the ship was going to a port where there would be more people for it to examine. All in all, Ajax (as they called the ape) was thought to be the most amazing and intelligent ape that anyone on the Marjorie W. had ever seen. Its intelligence was not its only amazing quality. Its size and body were very impressive for an ape. It was clearly old, but age did not seem to have reduced its physical or mental abilities.

En/Pt At last the Marjorie W. reached England, and there the officers and scientists felt sorry for the poor man they had rescued from the jungle. They gave Paulvitch money and wished him and his Ajax a safe journey.

En/Pt At the dock and during the trip to London, the Russian had his hands full with Ajax. He had to study every new face in the crowd, which frightened many people. But in the end, he seemed unable to find the person he was looking for. Then the great ape became sadly indifferent and only sometimes showed interest in a passing face.

En/Pt In London, Paulvitch went straight to a famous animal trainer with his prize. The man was very impressed with Ajax. He agreed to train him for a large share of the money from showing him, and for now he would also pay for both the ape and his owner.

En/Pt So Ajax came to London, and another strange event was added to the chain of happenings that would affect many lives.

Chapter 2

En/Pt Mr. Harold Moore was a serious young man with a sickly face. He took himself, life, and his work very seriously. His work was tutoring the young son of a British nobleman. He felt the boy was not doing as well as his parents had a right to expect, and he was now carefully explaining this to the boy's mother.

En/Pt "It is not that he is not clever," he said. "If that were true, I would have hope, because then I could use all my energy to overcome his dullness. But the trouble is that he is very intelligent, and he learns so fast that I cannot find fault with how he prepares his lessons. What worries me is that he seems to have no interest at all in the subjects we study. He does each lesson only as a task he wants to finish quickly, and I am sure he never thinks about it again until study time comes back. He seems interested only in tests of physical strength and in reading anything about wild animals and the lives and customs of uncivilized people. Stories about animals interest him especially. He will sit for hours reading books by African explorers, and twice I have found him sitting up in bed at night reading Carl Hagenbeck's book on men and beasts."

En/Pt The boy's mother tapped her foot nervously on the rug by the fireplace.

"You discourage this, of course?" she asked.

Mr. Moore moved about in embarrassment.

En/Pt "I -- ah -- tried to take the book from him," he replied, and a little color came to his pale cheek. "But -- ah -- your son is quite strong for someone so young."

En/Pt "He would not let you take it?" asked the mother.

En/Pt "He would not," the tutor said. "He was very good-tempered about it, but he insisted on pretending he was a gorilla and I was a chimpanzee trying to steal food from him. He jumped on me with the wildest growls I ever heard, lifted me high over his head, threw me onto his bed, and acted as if he was choking me to death. Then he stood on top of me and gave a terrible scream, which he said was the victory cry of a bull ape. After that, he carried me to the door, pushed me into the hall, and locked me out of his room."

En/Pt For several minutes, neither of them spoke. At last, the boy's mother broke the silence.

En/Pt "It is very necessary, Mr. Moore," she said, "that you do everything you can to stop Jack from doing this. He--" But she could say no more. A loud "Whoop!" from the window made them both jump up. Their room was on the second floor, and across from the window was a large tree with a branch reaching close to the sill. On this branch, they now saw the person they had been talking about. It was a tall, strong boy, standing easily on the bent branch and shouting with joy as he saw the frightened looks on their faces.

En/Pt The mother and tutor both ran to the window. But before they crossed half the room, the boy jumped quickly to the window sill and came inside.

En/Pt "The wild man from Borneo has just come to town," he sang. He danced around his frightened mother and shocked tutor like a warrior. Then he put his arms around his mother's neck and kissed both her cheeks.

En/Pt "Oh, Mother," he cried, "there's a wonderful educated ape being shown at one of the music halls. Willie Grimsby saw it last night. He says it can do everything except talk. It rides a bicycle, eats with a knife and fork, counts to ten, and does many other amazing things. Can I go and see it too? Oh, please, Mother, please let me."

En/Pt The mother gently patted the boy's cheek and shook her head. "No, Jack," she said. "You know I do not approve of such shows."

En/Pt "I don't see why not, Mother," the boy answered. "All the other boys go, and they go to the Zoo too. You will never let me do even that. Anybody would think I was a girl, or a mollycoddle. Oh, Father," he cried as the door opened and a tall man with gray eyes came in. "Oh, Father, can't I go?"

En/Pt "Go where, my son?" the new arrival asked.

En/Pt "He wants to go to a music hall to see a trained ape," said the mother, and she looked warningly at her husband.

En/Pt "Who, Ajax?" the man asked.

The boy nodded.

En/Pt "Well, I don't blame you, my son," said the father. "I would like to see him myself. They say he is very wonderful, and very large for an anthropoid. Let us all go, Jane. What do you say?" He turned to his wife, but she only shook her head firmly. Then she asked Mr. Moore if it was time for him and Jack to go to the study for the morning lessons. After the two had left, she turned to her husband.

En/Pt "John," she said, "something must be done to stop Jack from liking anything that might make him want savage life. I fear he has inherited this from you. You know from your own life how strong the call of the wild can be. You know how hard it has been for you to resist the strong wish to go back to jungle life. And you know better than anyone how terrible it would be for Jack if the savage jungle seemed tempting or easy to him."

En/Pt "I doubt that he can inherit a taste for jungle life from me," the man replied. "I cannot believe that such a thing can pass from father to son. And sometimes, Jane, I think you are too strict in trying to protect him. His love of animals, for example, and his wish to see this trained ape, is natural for a healthy boy of his age. Because he wants to see Ajax does not mean he wants to marry an ape. Even if he did, you should not have the right to cry 'shame!'" John Clayton, Lord Greystoke, put his arm around his wife and laughed kindly down at her face before he kissed her. Then he grew more serious and went on: "You have never told Jack about my early life, and you have not let me tell him either. I think this was a mistake. If I could have told him about Tarzan of the Apes, I could have removed much of the magic and romance that people imagine in jungle life when they know nothing about it. Then he might have learned from my experience. But now, if the jungle ever calls to him, he will only have his own feelings to guide him. I know how strong those feelings can be in the wrong direction."

En/Pt But Lady Greystoke only shook her head, as she had done many times before when this subject came up.

En/Pt "No, John," she said firmly. "I will never agree to putting any idea of savage life into Jack's mind. We both want to protect him from that."

En/Pt It was evening before they spoke of it again, and this time Jack brought it up himself. He had been sitting in a large chair and reading when he suddenly looked up and spoke to his father.

En/Pt "Why," he asked at once, "can't I go and see Ajax?"

"Your mother does not approve," his father answered.

"Do you?"

"That is not the question," Lord Greystoke answered, avoiding it. "It is enough that your mother objects."

En/Pt After a few moments of quiet thought, the boy said, "I am going to see him. I am not different from Willie Grimsby or any other boy who has been to see him. It did not harm them, and it will not harm me. I could go without telling you, but I will not do that. So I am telling you now that I am going to see Ajax."

En/Pt The boy did not sound rude or rebellious. He was simply stating the facts. His father could hardly hide a smile, or his admiration for the brave way his son acted.

En/Pt "I admire your honesty, Jack," he said. "I will be honest too. If you go to see Ajax without permission, I will punish you. I have never used physical punishment on you, but I warn you that if you disobey your mother's wishes now, I shall."

En/Pt "Yes, sir," the boy replied. Then he added, "I will tell you, sir, when I have been to see Ajax."

En/Pt Mr. Moore's room was next to the boy's room, and it was his habit to check on him every evening before going to bed. That night he was especially careful, because he had just spoken with the boy's father and mother. They had told him to make sure Jack did not go to the music hall where Ajax was being shown. So when he opened the boy's door at about half past nine, he was alarmed, though not completely surprised, to find the future Lord Greystoke fully dressed and about to climb out of his open bedroom window.

En/Pt Mr. Moore jumped quickly across the room, but it was not needed. When the boy heard him and knew he had been caught, he turned back as if he were giving up his plan.

En/Pt "Where were you going?" the excited Mr. Moore asked, out of breath.

"I am going to see Ajax," the boy replied calmly.

En/Pt "I am astonished," cried Mr. Moore. But a moment later he was even more shocked. The boy came close, grabbed him around the waist, lifted him off his feet, and threw him face down on the bed, pushing his face into a soft pillow.

En/Pt "Be quiet," the winner said. "Or I'll choke you."

En/Pt Mr. Moore *struggled*, but it did no good. Whatever Tarzan of the Apes had passed on to his son, he had also given him a strong body. The tutor was helpless in the boy's hands. Jack knelt on him, tore strips from a sheet, and tied Mr. Moore's hands behind his back. Then he rolled him over, put a gag in his mouth, and tied it in place with another strip around the back of his head. All the while, he spoke in a calm, low voice.

En/Pt "I am Waja, *chief* of the Waji," he said. "And you are Mohammed Dubn, the Arab sheik, who wants to murder my people and steal my ivory." He then quickly tied Mr. Moore's ankles up behind his wrists. "Ah-ha! Villain! I have you in my *power* at last. I am going now, but I shall return!" Tarzan's son then crossed the room, went through the open window, and slid down the rain pipe to *freedom*.

En/Pt Mr. Moore twisted and *struggled* on the bed. He was sure he would suffocate if no help came soon. In his panic, he rolled off the bed. The pain of the fall helped him think more clearly. He was no longer too frightened to reason. He lay still and tried to find a way out. Then he remembered that the room below was the one where Lord and Lady Greystoke had been sitting when he left them. He thought they might be gone by now, but the only thing he could do was try to get someone's attention below. After many failed *attempts*, he managed to tap the toe of his boot against the floor. He kept doing this for a long time. At last he heard footsteps on the stairs and then a knock at the door. Mr. Moore tapped hard with his toe, since he could not answer any other way. The knock came again after a pause. He tapped once more. Would they never open the door? He slowly rolled toward help. If he could reach the door and press his back against it, he could tap on the bottom and surely be heard. The knocking came again, a little louder, and then a voice said, "Mr. Jack!"

En/Pt It was one of the house servants, and Mr. Moore knew the voice. He almost burst a blood vessel trying to shout "come in" through the gag. After a moment, the man knocked again, louder this time, and called the boy's name again. When no one answered, he turned the knob. At that same moment, Mr. Moore suddenly remembered something that filled him with fresh terror: he had locked the door himself when he came into the room.

En/Pt He heard the servant try the door several times and then leave. After that, Mr. Moore fainted.

En/Pt Meanwhile, Jack was enjoying the music hall very much. He had arrived just as Ajax's act was starting. He had bought a box seat and was leaning over the rail, watching the huge ape with wide eyes. The trainer noticed the boy's handsome, eager face. One of Ajax's tricks was to enter one or more boxes during the act, as if searching for a lost relative, as the trainer explained. The man saw that sending Ajax into the box with this handsome boy would likely frighten him, because the great shaggy beast was so strong and close.

En/Pt So when it was time for the ape to come back from behind the stage in answer to applause, the trainer pointed Ajax toward the box where the boy was sitting alone. The huge ape jumped from the stage to the boy's side. But if the trainer expected fear and laughter, he was wrong. A broad smile appeared on the boy's face, and he put his hand on the ape's shaggy arm. Ajax held the boy by both shoulders and looked closely into his face, while the boy stroked his head and spoke softly to him.

En/Pt Ajax had never spent so long examining anyone before. He seemed upset and very excited. He chattered and muttered to the boy, and the trainer had never seen him show such kindness to a human being. Soon the ape climbed into the box and snuggled close to the boy. The audience was delighted. They were even happier when the trainer's time was up and he tried to make Ajax leave the box. The ape would not move. The manager grew angry at the delay and told the trainer to hurry. But when the trainer went into the box to pull Ajax away, the ape showed his sharp teeth and growled threateningly.

En/Pt The audience was full of joy. They cheered the ape. They cheered the boy. They also shouted and mocked the trainer and the

manager, who had accidentally shown himself and tried to help the trainer.

En/Pt At last, the trainer became *desperate*. He saw that if the ape's rebellion was not stopped at once, the animal might become useless for future shows. He hurried to his dressing room and got a heavy whip. He came back to the box, but when he *threatened* Ajax with it, he faced two angry enemies instead of one. The boy had jumped to his feet and picked up a *chair*. He stood beside the ape, ready to *defend* his new friend. The smile was gone from his handsome face. His gray eyes made the trainer stop and think. Beside him stood the giant ape, growling and ready.

En/Pt No one can know exactly what would have happened if help had not come in time. But the trainer would likely have been badly attacked, at the very least, because of the way the two faced him.

En/Pt A pale-faced man rushed into the Greystoke library to say that he had found Jack's door locked. He had knocked and called many times, but there was no answer. Instead, he heard a strange tapping and the sound of something moving on the floor, as if it might be a body.

En/Pt John Clayton ran up the stairs four steps at a time. His wife and the servant hurried after him. He called his son's name loudly, but got no answer. Then he threw his full weight, and all the strength of his powerful muscles, against the heavy door. The iron hinges snapped and the wood broke, and the door burst open.

En/Pt At the bottom of the door lay the *unconscious* body of Mr. Moore, and the door fell on him with a loud *crash*. Tarzan jumped through the *opening*, and a moment later the room was brightly lit by a dozen electric bulbs.

En/Pt It took several minutes before the tutor was found, because the door had covered him so completely. At last they pulled him out, cut away his gag and ropes, and gave him plenty of cold water. This helped him become *conscious* again.

En/Pt "Where is Jack?" was John Clayton's first question. Then he asked, "Who did this?" He was thinking of Rokoff and fearing that Jack had been taken away a second time.

En/Pt Slowly, Mr. Moore got to his feet. He looked around the room. Little by little, he gathered his thoughts. Then the details of his terrible experience came back to him.

En/Pt His first words were 'I resign, sir, starting now. You don't need a tutor for your son. You need a wild animal trainer.'

En/Pt "But where is he?" Lady Greystoke cried.

"He has gone to see Ajax."

En/Pt Tarzan could hardly keep from smiling. He saw that the tutor was more frightened than hurt. Then he turned his closed car and left for a well-known music hall.

Chapter 3

En/Pt The trainer raised his whip and hesitated for a moment at the door of the box, where the boy and the ape faced him. Then a tall man with broad shoulders pushed past him and went in. When the boy saw the new arrival, a small blush came to his cheeks.

En/Pt "Father!" he cried.

En/Pt The ape looked once at the English lord, then jumped toward him, calling out in excited sounds. The man opened his eyes wide in surprise and stood still, as if he had turned to stone.

En/Pt "Akut!" he cried.

En/Pt The boy looked in confusion from the ape to his father, and from his father to the ape. The trainer was shocked as he listened to what came next. From the Englishman came ape-like sounds, and the huge ape holding him answered in the same way.

En/Pt In the wings, a horribly bent and ugly old man watched the scene in the box. His pockmarked face changed quickly from one feeling to another, from pleasure to fear.

En/Pt "I have looked for you for a long time, Tarzan," said Akut. "Now that I have found you, I shall come to your jungle and live there always."

En/Pt The man stroked the beast's head. Through his mind ran a quick train of memories that carried him deep into the primeval African forest, where this huge, man-like beast had fought shoulder to shoulder with him years before. He saw the black Mugambi swinging his deadly knob-stick, and beside them, with bared fangs and bristling whiskers, Sheeta the terrible. Close behind the savage and the savage panther pressed the hideous apes of Akut. The man sighed. The jungle lust he had thought dead rose strong within him again. Ah, if only he could go back, even for one short month - to feel the leafy branches brush against his naked hide, to smell the musty rot of dead plants that is frankincense and myrrh to the jungle-born, to sense the silent coming of the great hunters upon his trail, to hunt and be hunted, to kill! The picture drew him. And then came another picture: a sweet-faced woman, still young and beautiful; friends; a home; a son. He shrugged his giant shoulders.

En/Pt "It cannot be, Akut," he said. "But if you want to go back, I will make sure it is done. You could not be happy here. I may not be happy there."

En/Pt The trainer stepped forward. The ape showed his teeth and growled.

"Go with him, Akut," said Tarzan of the Apes. "I will come and see you tomorrow."

En/Pt The beast moved slowly and angrily to the trainer's side. At John Clayton's request, the trainer said where they could find him. Tarzan turned to his son.

En/Pt "Come!" he said, and the two left the theater. After they got into the limousine, neither of them spoke for several minutes. At last the boy broke the silence.

En/Pt "The ape knew you," he said, "and you spoke to each other in the ape's language. How did he know you, and how did you learn his language?"

En/Pt Then, for the first time, Tarzan of the Apes told his son about his early life. He spoke *briefly* about being born in the jungle, losing his parents, and being raised by Kala, the great she ape. He also told him about the dangers of the jungle, the wild animals, long droughts, heavy rains, hunger, cold, heat, fear, and pain. He hoped these stories would make the boy dislike the jungle. But these were the very things Tarzan loved and remembered best. While he spoke, he forgot one important thing: the boy beside him, listening closely, was Tarzan of the Apes' son.

En/Pt After the boy was put to bed, and without any punishment, John Clayton told his wife about the evening. He said he had finally told the boy the truth about his jungle life. His wife had long expected that their son would one day hear about those terrible years when his father had lived in the jungle as a wild beast. She only shook her head, still hoping the strong jungle *desire* in the father had not passed to the son.

En/Pt Tarzan visited Akut the next day, but Jack was not allowed to go with him, even though he begged. This time Tarzan saw the old, pock-marked owner of the ape, but he did not know him as the clever Paulvitch from before. Because Akut asked him to, Tarzan brought up the

idea of buying the ape. But Paulvitch would not say a [price](#). He said he would think about it.

En/Pt When Tarzan came home, Jack was eager to hear about the visit. He finally suggested that his father buy the ape and bring him home. Lady Greystoke was shocked by the idea, but the boy did not give up. Tarzan said that he had wanted to buy Akut and send him back to his jungle home, and his mother agreed. Jack asked to visit the ape, but she refused again. He did have the [address](#) the trainer had given his father, and two days later he escaped his new tutor, who had taken Mr. Moore's place. After a long search in a part of London he had never seen before, he found the dirty, tiny rooms of the old man with the pock-marked face. The man answered the knock himself. When Jack said he had come to see Ajax, he opened the door and let him into the small room he shared with the great ape. In the past, Paulvitch had been a fussy bad man, but ten years of terrible life among cannibals in Africa had removed every trace of cleanliness from him. His clothes were wrinkled and dirty. His hands were unwashed, and his few thin hairs were not combed. His room was a mess of filth. When the boy came in, he saw the great ape crouched on the bed, where the blankets and quilts were tangled and smelled badly. When the ape saw the boy, he jumped to the floor and moved toward him. The man did not know Jack and feared the ape meant harm, so he stepped between them and ordered the ape back to the bed.

En/Pt "He will not hurt me," cried the boy. "We are friends, and before, he was my father's friend. They knew each other in the jungle. My father is Lord Greystoke. He does not know I have come here. My mother forbade me to come, but I wanted to see Ajax, and I will pay you if you let me come often and see him."

En/Pt When Paulvitch heard who the boy was, he narrowed his eyes. Since he saw Tarzan again at the theater, a [desire](#) for revenge had started growing in his mind. Weak and criminal people often [blame](#) others for their own problems. So now, Alexis Paulvitch remembered his past. He thought that all the bad things that happened to him were Tarzan's [fault](#). Tarzan and Rokoff had tried to ruin and kill Tarzan, but their plans failed.

En/Pt At first, he could not see any safe way to hurt Tarzan through Tarzan's son. But he could see that the boy might be useful for revenge, so he decided to be friendly with him and wait for a chance later. He told

the boy everything he knew about his father's life in the jungle. Then he learned that the boy had been kept away from these stories for many years and had been forbidden to visit the zoological gardens. He also learned that the boy had tied up and gagged his tutor to get away and come to the music hall to see Ajax. Then he guessed the parents' great fear: that the boy might long for the jungle, just as his father had.

En/Pt So Paulvitch encouraged the boy to visit him often. He always fed the boy's hunger for stories about the wild world he knew so well. He also left him alone with Akut a great deal, and soon he was surprised to learn that the boy could make the great beast understand him. The boy had really learned many words from the simple language of the ape people.

En/Pt During this time Tarzan visited Paulvitch several times. He seemed eager to buy Ajax. At last he told the man openly that he wanted to send the beast back to freedom in his jungle home. He also said that his wife feared their son might learn where the ape was and, because he loved the beast, might develop the wandering spirit that had shaped Tarzan's own life.

En/Pt The Russian almost smiled as he listened to Lord Greystoke. Only half an hour earlier, the future Lord Greystoke had been sitting on the messy bed and talking to Ajax as easily as if he were an ape by birth.

En/Pt During this talk, Paulvitch had an idea. He agreed to take a huge sum for the ape and to deliver him two days later to a ship leaving Dover for Africa. He had two reasons for agreeing. First, the money was very important to him, because the ape no longer earned him anything. Ajax had stopped performing on stage after he found Tarzan. It was as if the beast had been brought from the jungle and shown to thousands of people only to find his old friend and master. After that, he seemed to think there was no reason to mix with human beings anymore. No amount of persuasion could make him go on stage again, and when the trainer once tried force, he was lucky to escape alive. Jack Clayton saved him. Jack had been allowed to visit the animal in the dressing room at the music hall, and he stepped in at once when he saw that the savage beast meant real danger.

En/Pt Besides the money, the Russian also wanted revenge. He had grown more bitter as he thought about the failures and misery of his life,

and he blamed Tarzan for them. The latest loss, and not the smallest, was Ajax's refusal to keep earning money for him. He blamed that refusal directly on Tarzan and finally convinced himself that the ape man had told the great ape not to go on stage.

En/Pt Paulvitch was naturally cruel, and torture and hunger had made his mind and body weaker and more twisted. He had changed from a cold, clever, highly intelligent evil man into a dangerous threat with the confused mind of a broken person. Even so, his plan was still clever enough to make people wonder whether he was really insane. First, it would make sure he got the payment Lord Greystoke had promised for taking the ape away. Then it would give him revenge through the son he loved so much. This part of the plan was crude and brutal. It did not have the careful cruelty of the old days, when he worked with Nikolas Rokoff. But it would keep Paulvitch from being blamed, because the fault would seem to belong to the ape, who would also be punished for refusing to support the Russian any longer.

En/Pt Everything seemed to work against Paulvitch. By chance, Tarzan's son heard his father tell the boy's mother how he planned to send Akut safely back to his jungle home. After hearing this, Jack begged them to bring the ape home so he could have him as a playmate. Tarzan would not have minded, but Lady Greystoke was shocked by the idea. Jack begged his mother, but it did no good. She would not change her mind. In the end, Jack seemed to accept her decision that the ape must be sent back to Africa and the boy must return to school after his vacation.

En/Pt He did not try to visit Paulvitch's room again that day. Instead, he kept busy in other ways. He had always been given plenty of money, so when he needed it, he had no trouble getting several hundred pounds. He spent some of it on odd things, which he secretly brought into the house when he came back late in the afternoon.

En/Pt The next morning, after giving his father time to go before him and finish his business with Paulvitch, the boy hurried to the Russian's room. He did not know the man's true nature, so he did not dare tell him everything. He feared the old man would not only refuse to help, but would also tell his father. Instead, he simply asked permission to take Ajax to Dover. He said this would save the old man a tiring journey and

also put several pounds in his pocket, because the boy meant to pay the Russian well.

En/Pt "You see," he went on, "there will be no danger of being found out, because I am supposed to leave on an afternoon train for school. Instead, I will come here after they have seen me onto the train. Then I can take Ajax to Dover and reach school only one day late. No one will know, nothing bad will happen, and I shall have one extra day with Ajax before I lose him forever."

En/Pt The plan fit perfectly with what Paulvitch had in mind. If he had known what the boy was planning next, he would probably have given up his own revenge plan and helped the boy with all his heart. That would have been better for Paulvitch, if only he could have seen the future a few hours ahead.

En/Pt That afternoon Lord and Lady Greystoke said good-bye to their son and saw him safely seated in a first-class railway carriage that would take him to school in a few hours. But as soon as they left him, he gathered his bags, got out of the compartment, and went to a cab stand outside the station. There he hired a cab to take him to the Russian's address. It was dusk when he arrived. Paulvitch was waiting for him. The man was walking nervously up and down. The ape was tied to the bed with a strong cord. Jack had never seen Ajax held like this before. He looked at Paulvitch with a questioning face. The man stammered that he thought the animal knew he was to be sent away, and he was afraid Ajax would try to escape.

En/Pt Paulvitch held another piece of cord in his hand. It had a loop at one end, and he kept playing with it. He walked back and forth across the room. His pockmarked face moved strangely as he talked to himself in silence. The boy had never seen him like this, and it made him uneasy. At last Paulvitch stopped on the far side of the room, away from the ape.

En/Pt "Come here," he said to the boy. "I will show you how to tie the ape if he shows signs of rebelling during the trip."

En/Pt The boy laughed. "That will not be necessary," he said. "Ajax will do whatever I tell him."

En/Pt The old man stamped his foot in anger. "Come here, as I tell you," he repeated. "If you do not obey me, you shall not go with the ape to Dover. I will not take any chances that he may escape."

En/Pt Still smiling, the boy crossed the room and stood in front of the Russ.

En/Pt "Turn around and face away from me," the other man said. "Then I can show you how to tie him quickly."

En/Pt The boy obeyed and put his hands behind him when Paulvitch told him to. At once the old man slipped a noose over one wrist, made two half hitches around the other wrist, and tied the cord.

En/Pt As soon as the boy was tied, the man's behavior changed. He cursed angrily, turned his prisoner around, tripped him, and threw him hard to the floor. He jumped onto the boy's chest as he fell. From the bed, the ape growled and fought against its ropes. The boy did not cry out, because he had learned from his savage father that no one would come to help someone who had fallen.

En/Pt Paulvitch's fingers reached for the boy's throat. He looked down at his victim with a horrible grin.

En/Pt "Your father ruined me," he muttered. "This will pay him back. He will think the ape did it. I will tell him the ape did it. I left him alone for a few minutes, and you came in quietly, and then the ape killed you. After I choke the life out of you, I will throw your body onto the bed. When I bring your father here, he will see the ape sitting over it," and the twisted villain laughed with pleasure. His fingers closed on the boy's throat.

En/Pt Behind them, the angry beast growled so loudly that the sound echoed around the small room. The boy turned pale, but he showed no other fear. He was Tarzan's son. The fingers tightened on his throat, and he could hardly breathe. The ape threw itself against the strong cord that held it. Then it turned, wrapped the cord around its hands like a man, and pulled hard backward. Its big muscles stood out under its shaggy skin. There was a sound like broken wood. The cord held, but part of the bed's footboard broke off.

En/Pt At the sound, Paulvitch looked up. His ugly face turned white with fear. The ape was free.

En/Pt With one leap, the creature was on him. The man screamed. The beast pulled him away from the boy's body. Huge fingers sank into the man's flesh. Yellow teeth opened near his throat. He struggled, but it was useless. When the teeth closed, Alexis Paulvitch's soul was gone.

En/Pt The boy got to his feet with Akut's help. For two hours, at the boy's direction, the ape worked on the knots that held his friend's wrists. At last the knots came loose, and the boy was free. Then he opened one of his bags and took out some clothes. He had planned carefully. He did not ask the beast for advice, but the ape did everything he told it to do. Together they slipped out of the house, and a casual person would not have noticed that one of them was an ape.

Chapter 4

En/Pt The killing of the lonely old Russian, Michael Sabrov, by his trained ape was in the newspapers for a few days. Lord Greystoke read about it and took care not to let his name be linked to the case. He also kept himself informed about the police search for the ape.

En/Pt Like most people, his main interest was the mysterious disappearance of the killer. But then, a few days later, he learned that his son Jack had not arrived at school. They had seen him safely on the train. The father did not think his son's disappearance was related to the ape. A month later, careful investigation showed that Jack left the train before it left London. A cab driver had taken him to the old Russian's address. Then Tarzan of the Apes realized that Akut was connected to the boy's disappearance.

En/Pt After the cab driver left the boy beside the curb in front of the house where the Russian stayed, there was no more clue. No one had seen the boy or the ape after that, at least no one who was still alive. The owner of the house recognized the boy's picture as someone who often visited the old man's room. He knew nothing else. So the searchers reached a dead end at the door of a dirty old building in a poor part of London.

En/Pt The day after Alexis Paulvitch died, a young man traveling with his sick grandmother boarded a steamer at Dover. The old woman wore a thick veil, and because of her age and illness, she had to be carried aboard in a wheeled chair.

En/Pt The boy would let no one but himself wheel her. He also helped her from the chair into their cabin with his own hands. After that, no one from the ship saw the old lady again until they got off the ship. The boy even said he would do the cabin steward's work, because, he explained, his grandmother had a nervous nature and hated having strangers near her.

En/Pt Outside the cabin, and no one on board knew what he did inside it, the boy was like any other healthy English boy. He mixed with the other passengers and became a favorite with the officers. He also made many friends among the sailors. He was generous and easygoing, but he

also had a proud and strong character that made people admire and like him.

En/Pt An American named Condon was on the ship. He was a known criminal wanted in several US cities. He did not notice the boy until he saw the boy accidentally show a roll of money. After that, Condon became friendly with the boy. He learned that the boy was traveling with his sick grandmother. Their destination was a small port on the west coast of Africa, near the equator. Their name was Billings, and they had no friends there. When Condon asked why they were going, the boy did not want to say. Condon did not push further. He already knew enough.

En/Pt Several times Condon tried to get the boy into a card game. But the boy was not interested, and the angry looks from some of the other men made Condon decide to find another way to get the boy's money.

En/Pt At last the day came when the steamer dropped anchor near a wooded headland. There, a score or more sheet-iron shacks made an ugly mark on the land and showed that civilization had arrived. Around the edge were thatched huts of the native people. They looked wild and ancient, and they fit the tropical jungle behind them. At the same time, they made the poor ugliness of the white settlers' first buildings stand out even more.

En/Pt The boy leaned over the rail and looked far past the man-made town into the jungle made by God. A small shiver of excitement ran down his back. Then, without meaning to, he seemed to see his mother's loving eyes and his father's strong face, which showed love too. He felt his resolve begin to weaken. Nearby, one of the ship's officers was shouting orders to a group of native boats that were coming to carry off the steamer's cargo for this small post.

En/Pt "When does the next ship for England stop here?" the boy asked.

En/Pt "The Emanuel should be here soon," the officer answered. "I thought we'd find her here," and he kept calling out to the dusty crowd moving closer to the ship.

En/Pt Getting the boy's grandmother down to a waiting canoe was hard. The boy stayed right beside her. At last she was safely in the canoe, and he climbed down after her like a cat. He was so busy helping

her that he did not notice a small package slipping from his pocket. It fell into the sea.

En/Pt Soon after the boat with the boy and the old woman left for the shore, Condon called a canoe on the other side of the ship. After some bargaining with the owner, he got his bags and himself into it. When he reached land, he stayed out of sight of the ugly two-story place marked "Hotel." He did not go in to arrange a room until it was quite dark.

En/Pt In a back room on the second floor, the boy tried to explain to his grandmother that he had decided to go back to England on the next ship. He told her that she could stay in Africa if she wanted, but he felt he must return to his father and mother. He believed they were suffering because he was gone. This shows that his parents had not known about the adventure plan made by him and the old woman.

En/Pt After he made his decision, the boy felt *relief* from the worry that had troubled him for many sleepless nights. When he fell asleep, he dreamed of a happy meeting with his family at home. But while he slept, Fate came quietly down the dark hall of the dirty building. Fate came in the *shape* of the American thief, Condon.

En/Pt Carefully, the man came to the boy's door. He waited and listened until the regular breathing inside told him that both were asleep. Then he put a thin key into the lock. He turned the key and knob together, and pushed the door open. He went inside and closed the door behind him. Dark clouds covered the moon, so the room was very dim. Condon moved toward the bed. In the far corner, something moved silently. But Condon heard nothing. He was looking only at the bed, where he expected to find a young boy and his helpless, sick grandmother.

En/Pt The American wanted only the bank roll. If he could take it without being seen, that was good. If someone fought back, he was ready for that too. The boy's clothes were on a *chair* beside the bed. Condon searched them quickly, but found no roll of new notes. It must be under the pillows. He moved closer and put his hand under the pillow. Just then the cloud moved away and bright moonlight filled the room. At the same moment, the boy opened his eyes and looked straight at Condon. Condon saw at once that the boy was alone in the bed. He grabbed for the boy's throat. But when the boy stood up, Condon heard a low growl

behind him. Then the boy caught his wrists, and Condon felt the strength in those slim white hands.

En/Pt Then he felt other hands at his throat, rough hairy hands reaching over his shoulders from behind. He looked back in terror and saw a huge ape, like a man, holding him from behind. The ape's bare teeth were close to his throat. The boy held his wrists so he could not move. No one made a sound. Condon looked around the room and suddenly understood the terrible truth. What strange creatures had he put himself in the power of? He struggled wildly to shake off the boy and turn on the creature behind him. He broke one hand free and struck the boy hard in the face. That seemed to release wild fury in the hairy creature at his throat. Condon heard a low, savage snarl. It was the last thing he ever heard in life. Then he was pulled backward onto the floor. A heavy body fell on him, strong teeth sank into his throat, and everything went black. A moment later the ape rose from his body, but Condon did not know it. He was dead.

En/Pt The boy, shocked, jumped from the bed and leaned over the man's body. He knew that Akut had killed to protect him, as he had killed Michael Sabrov. But now they were in wild Africa, far from home and friends. What would people do to Akut and him? The boy knew that murder could bring the death penalty. He also knew that an accomplice could be punished too. Who would speak for them? Everyone would be against them. This was a rough half-civilized place. He thought they would drag Akut and him out in the morning and hang them from the nearest tree. He had read of such things in America. Africa seemed even worse and wilder than the American West. Yes, they would both be hanged in the morning!

En/Pt Was there no escape? He thought for a moment in silence. Then he felt relief. He clapped his hands and looked at his clothes on the chair. Money could solve everything. It could save him and Akut. He felt for the bank roll in his pocket, but it was gone. He searched his other pockets, first slowly and then in panic. He dropped to his hands and knees and looked over the floor. He lit the lamp, moved the bed aside, and felt every inch of the floor. He paused beside Condon's body, then forced himself to touch it. He turned it over and searched underneath for the money. It was not there either. He thought Condon had come into the room to steal, but he did not believe the man had taken the money in

time. Still, it was nowhere else, so it must be on the dead man's body. Again and again he searched the room and returned to the corpse, but he could not find the money.

En/Pt He was nearly mad with despair. What could they do? In the morning they would be found and killed. Even with his large body and strength, he was still only a little boy, a frightened boy who missed home and reasoned badly because he knew so little about life. One terrible fact filled his mind: they had killed a man, and they were among wild strangers who would thirst for the blood of the first victim fate gave them. This was what he had learned from cheap adventure stories.

En/Pt And they had to have money!

En/Pt Again he went to the body, this time bravely. The ape sat in a corner and watched the young man. He began to take off the American's clothing piece by piece, and he checked each item carefully. He even searched the shoes with great care. When he had finished and found nothing, he lay back on the bed with wide eyes. He saw nothing around him, only a dark picture of the future, where two bodies hung silently from a great tree branch.

En/Pt He did not know how long he sat there. At last, a noise from the floor below made him jump up. He quickly blew out the lamp, crossed the floor quietly, and locked the door. Then he turned to the ape, with his mind made up.

En/Pt Only the night before, he had been ready to leave for home at the first chance and ask his parents to forgive him for this crazy adventure. Now he knew he might never see them again. He felt the blood of a man was on his hands. In his troubled thoughts, he no longer blamed the ape for Condon's death. Panic had made him believe he himself was guilty. If he had money, he might buy justice. But without a penny, what hope could strangers have here?

En/Pt But what happened to the money? He tried to remember when he last saw it. He could not remember. And even if he could, he would not know how it disappeared. He did not notice when the small package fell from his pocket into the sea. That happened as he climbed over the ship's side into the canoe that took him to shore.

En/Pt Then he turned to Akut. "Come!" he said in the language of the great apes.

En/Pt He forgot that he was wearing only a thin pajama suit and led the way to the open window. He put his head outside and listened carefully. A single tree stood a few feet from the window. The boy sprang to its trunk and held on like a cat for a moment before climbing down quietly to the ground. The great ape followed closely behind. Two hundred yards away, the jungle reached near the small town. The boy led the way there. No one saw them. A moment later, the jungle hid them, and John Clayton, the future Lord Greystoke, disappeared from the sight and knowledge of men.

En/Pt Late the next morning, a native houseman knocked on the door of the room given to Mrs. Billings and her grandson. When there was no answer, he tried the master key, but found another key already in the lock, from the inside. He told Herr Skopf, the owner, who at once went to the second floor and knocked hard on the door too. Again there was no reply. He bent to the keyhole to look inside, and because he was a heavy man, he lost his balance. He put a hand on the floor to steady himself. Then he felt something soft, thick, and wet under his fingers. In the weak corridor light, he looked at his palm and shivered when he saw a dark red stain on his hand. He jumped up and threw his shoulder against the door. Herr Skopf was a heavy man then, or at least he was. I have not seen him for several years. The weak door broke under his weight, and he fell quickly into the room beyond.

En/Pt Before him was the biggest mystery of his life. At his feet lay the dead body of a strange man. His neck was broken, and his throat was cut, as if by a wild animal. He was completely naked, and his clothes were scattered around him. The old lady and her grandson were gone. The window was open. They must have left through it, because the door had been locked from the inside.

En/Pt But how could the boy have carried his sick grandmother from a second-story window to the ground? It was impossible. Herr Skopf searched the small room again. He saw that the bed had been moved far from the wall. Why? He looked under it again for the third or fourth time. The two were gone, but he knew the old lady could not have left without men to carry her down, just as they had carried her up the day before.

En/Pt Further searching only deepened the mystery. All the clothing of the two was still in the room - so if they had gone, they must have gone naked or in their night clothes. Herr Skopf shook his head; then he scratched it. He was baffled. He had never heard of Sherlock Holmes, or he would have lost no time in calling on that famous detective, for here was a real mystery. An old woman - an invalid who had to be carried from the ship to her room - and her handsome grandson had entered a room on the second floor of his hotel the day before. Their evening meal had been served in their room, and that was the last anyone saw of them. At nine the next morning, the body of a strange man was the only thing in that room. No boat had left the harbour in the meantime. There was no railroad within hundreds of miles. There was no other white settlement the two could reach without several days of hard marching with a well-equipped safari. They had simply vanished into thin air. The native he had sent to check the ground beneath the open window had just returned to report no sign of a footstep - and what kind of creatures could have dropped that far to the soft turf without leaving a trace? Herr Skopf shuddered. Yes, it was a great mystery. There was something uncanny about the whole thing. He hated to think about it, and he dreaded the coming of night.

En/Pt It was a great mystery to Herr Skopf, and it probably still is.

Chapter 5

En/Pt Captain Armand Jacot of the Foreign Legion sat on an open saddle blanket at the foot of a small palm tree. His broad shoulders and close-cut head rested comfortably against the rough trunk. His long legs were stretched out in front of him, and his spurs were buried in the sandy ground of a small desert oasis. He was resting after a long day of hard riding over the shifting desert sands.

En/Pt He lazily smoked his cigarette and watched his orderly prepare his evening meal. Captain Armand Jacot was very pleased with himself and with life. To his right, his troop of sun-tanned veterans was busy and noisy. They were free for a while from strict discipline and relaxed their tired muscles, laughing, joking, and smoking as they got ready to eat after twelve hours without food. Among them sat five Arabs in white robes. They were silent, bound tightly, and watched by guards.

En/Pt Seeing them gave Captain Armand Jacot the happy feeling of a job well done. For a long, hot month, he and his small troop had searched the desert for a band of raiders. This gang was blamed for many stolen camels, horses, and goats, and for enough murders to have sent them to the guillotine many times.

En/Pt A week earlier, he had found them. In the battle that followed, he lost two of his own men, but the raiders were almost destroyed. Perhaps six escaped, but the rest, except for the five prisoners, were killed by the legionaries' bullets. Best of all, their leader, Achmet ben Houdin, was among the prisoners.

En/Pt From the prisoners, Captain Jacot let his mind travel across the remaining miles of sand to the small army post where he would see his wife and little daughter the next day. Thinking of them always softened his eyes. He could already picture the mother's beauty in little Jeanne's face, and both faces would be smiling up at him when he swung down from his tired horse late the next afternoon. He could almost feel the soft cheeks pressed against his own, like velvet against leather.

En/Pt His daydream was broken by the voice of a guard calling a non-commissioned officer. Captain Jacot looked up. The sun had not set yet, but the shadows of the few trees around the water hole and of his men and horses stretched far east across the golden sand. The guard

was pointing in that direction, and the corporal, with narrowed eyes, looked into the distance. Captain Jacot stood up. He was not a man who was happy to see through others' eyes. He must see for himself. Usually he saw things long before others knew there was anything to see - a quality that gave him the nickname Hawk. Now he saw, just beyond the long shadows, twelve small dots rising and falling among the sands. They disappeared and appeared again, but always grew bigger. Jacot recognized them immediately. They were horsemen of the desert. Already a sergeant was running toward him. The whole camp was looking into the distance. Jacot gave a few short orders to the sergeant, who saluted, turned around, and returned to the men. He gathered twelve, who saddled their horses, mounted, and rode out to meet the strangers. The other men got ready for quick action. It was possible that the horsemen riding so fast toward the camp might be friends of the prisoners, trying to free their relatives with a surprise attack. But Jacot doubted this, because the strangers were making no attempt to hide. They were galloping fast toward the camp in plain view. There might be trickery behind their honest look, but no one who knew The Hawk would be foolish enough to hope to trap him like that.

En/Pt The sergeant and his men met the Arabs about two hundred yards from the camp. Jacot saw him talking with a tall man in white robes, who was clearly the leader. Soon the sergeant and the Arab rode side by side toward the camp. Jacot waited for them. They stopped, pulled in their horses, and got down in front of him.

En/Pt "Sheik Amor ben Khatour," said the sergeant as an introduction.

En/Pt Captain Jacot looked at the new man. He knew almost every important Arab within several hundred miles, but he had never seen this one. The man was tall, looked worn by the weather, and seemed sour and unfriendly. He was sixty or older. His eyes were narrow and mean. Captain Jacot did not like the look of him.

En/Pt "Well?" he asked carefully.

The Arab went straight to the point.

En/Pt "Achmet ben Houdin is my sister's son," he said. "If you give him to me, I will make sure he does not break the French laws again."

En/Pt Jacot shook his head. "That cannot be," he said. "I must take him back with me. He will be judged fairly by a civil court. If he is innocent, he will be set free."

En/Pt "And if he is not innocent?" asked the Arab.

"He is accused of many murders. If he is found guilty of even one, he must die."

En/Pt The Arab kept his left hand hidden under his burnous. Then he took it out and showed a large goatskin purse, full and heavy with coins. He opened it and let some of the money fall into his right hand. It was all good French gold. From the size of the purse, Captain Jacot guessed it held a small fortune. Sheik Amor ben Khatour dropped the coins back into the purse one by one. Jacot watched him closely. They were alone, and the sergeant had moved away with his back to them. Then the sheik held out the full purse on his open palm toward Captain Jacot.

En/Pt "Achmet ben Houdin, my sister's son, might escape tonight," he said. "Eh?"

En/Pt Captain Armand Jacot went red at the roots of his short hair. Then he turned very pale and took a half-step toward the Arab. His fists were tight. At once, he changed his mind and did not act on the urge.

En/Pt "Sergeant!" he called. The sergeant came quickly and saluted.

En/Pt "Take this black dog back to his people," he ordered. "Make them leave now. Shoot the first man who comes near camp tonight."

En/Pt Sheik Amor ben Khatour stood straight and tall. His cruel eyes narrowed. He held the bag of gold up to the French officer's eyes.

Index - Original English Text

[Chapter 1](#)

[Chapter 2](#)

[Chapter 3](#)

[Chapter 4](#)

[Chapter 5](#)

Chapter 1

Pt The long boat of the Marjorie W. was floating down the broad Ugambi with ebb tide and current. Her crew were lazily enjoying this respite from the arduous labor of rowing up stream. Three miles below them lay the Marjorie W. herself, quite ready to sail so soon as they should have clambered aboard and swung the long boat to its davits. Presently the attention of every man was drawn from his dreaming or his gossiping to the northern bank of the river. There, screaming at them in a cracked falsetto and with skinny arms outstretched, stood a strange apparition of a man.

Pt "Wot the 'ell?" ejaculated one of the crew.

Pt "A white man!" muttered the mate, and then: "Man the oars, boys, and we'll just pull over an' see what he wants."

Pt When they came close to the shore they saw an emaciated creature with scant white locks tangled and matted. The thin, bent body was naked but for a loin cloth. Tears were rolling down the sunken pock-marked cheeks. The man jabbered at them in a strange tongue.

Pt "Rooshun," hazarded the mate. "Savvy English?" he called to the man.

Pt He did, and in that tongue, brokenly and haltingly, as though it had been many years since he had used it, he begged them to take him with them away from this awful country. Once on board the Marjorie W. the stranger told his rescuers a pitiful tale of privation, hardships, and torture, extending over a period of ten years. How he happened to have come to Africa he did not tell them, leaving them to assume he had forgotten the incidents of his life prior to the frightful ordeals that had wrecked him mentally and physically. He did not even tell them his true name, and so they knew him only as Michael Sabrov, nor was there any resemblance between this sorry wreck and the virile, though unprincipled, Alexis Paulvitch of old.

Pt It had been ten years since the Russian had escaped the fate of his friend, the arch-fiend Rokoff, and not once, but many times during those ten years had Paulvitch cursed the fate that had given to Nicholas Rokoff death and immunity from suffering while it had meted to him the hideous

terrors of an existence infinitely worse than the death that persistently refused to claim him.

Pt Paulvitch had taken to the jungle when he had seen the beasts of Tarzan and their savage lord swarm the deck of the Kincaid, and in his terror lest Tarzan pursue and capture him he had stumbled on deep into the jungle, only to fall at last into the hands of one of the savage cannibal tribes that had felt the weight of Rokoff's evil temper and cruel brutality. Some strange whim of the chief of this tribe saved Paulvitch from death only to plunge him into a life of misery and torture. For ten years he had been the butt of the village, beaten and stoned by the women and children, cut and slashed and disfigured by the warriors; a victim of often recurring fevers of the most malignant variety. Yet he did not die. Smallpox laid its hideous clutches upon him; leaving him unspeakably branded with its repulsive marks. Between it and the attentions of the tribe the countenance of Alexis Paulvitch was so altered that his own mother could not have recognized in the pitiful mask he called his face a single familiar feature. A few scraggly, yellow-white locks had supplanted the thick, dark hair that had covered his head. His limbs were bent and twisted, he walked with a shuffling, unsteady gait, his body doubled forward. His teeth were gone -- knocked out by his savage masters. Even his mentality was but a sorry mockery of what it once had been.

Pt They took him aboard the Marjorie W., and there they fed and nursed him. He gained a little in strength; but his appearance never altered for the better -- a human derelict, battered and wrecked, they had found him; a human derelict, battered and wrecked, he would remain until death claimed him. Though still in his thirties, Alexis Paulvitch could easily have passed for eighty. Inscrutable Nature had demanded of the accomplice a greater penalty than his principal had paid.

Pt In the mind of Alexis Paulvitch there lingered no thoughts of revenge -- only a dull hatred of the man whom he and Rokoff had tried to break, and failed. There was hatred, too, of the memory of Rokoff, for Rokoff had led him into the horrors he had undergone. There was hatred of the police of a score of cities from which he had had to flee. There was hatred of law, hatred of order, hatred of everything. Every moment of the man's waking life was filled with morbid thought of hatred -- he had become mentally as he was physically in outward appearance, the personification of the blighting emotion of Hate. He had little or nothing to

do with the men who had [rescued](#) him. He was too weak to work and too morose for company, and so they quickly left him alone to his own devices.

Pt The Marjorie W. had been chartered by a syndicate of wealthy manufacturers, equipped with a laboratory and a staff of scientists, and sent out to search for some natural product which the manufacturers who footed the bills had been importing from South America at an enormous cost. What the product was none on board the Marjorie W. knew except the scientists, nor is it of any moment to us, other than that it led the ship to a certain island off the coast of Africa after Alexis Paulvitch had been taken aboard.

Pt The ship lay at anchor off the coast for several weeks. The monotony of life aboard her became trying for the [crew](#). They went often ashore, and finally Paulvitch asked to accompany them -- he too was tiring of the blighting sameness of existence upon the ship.

Pt The island was heavily timbered. Dense jungle ran down almost to the beach. The scientists were far inland, prosecuting their search for the valuable commodity that native rumor upon the mainland had led them to believe might be found here in marketable quantity. The ship's company fished, hunted, and explored. Paulvitch shuffled up and down the beach, or lay in the [shade](#) of the great trees that skirted it. One day, as the men were gathered at a little distance inspecting the body of a panther that had fallen to the gun of one of them who had been hunting inland, Paulvitch lay sleeping beneath his tree. He was awakened by the touch of a hand upon his shoulder. With a start he sat up to see a huge, anthropoid ape squatting at his side, inspecting him intently. The Russian was thoroughly frightened. He glanced toward the sailors -- they were a couple of hundred yards away. Again the ape plucked at his shoulder, jabbering plaintively. Paulvitch saw no menace in the inquiring gaze, or in the attitude of the beast. He got slowly to his feet. The ape rose at his side.

Pt Half doubled, the man shuffled cautiously away toward the sailors. The ape moved with him, taking one of his arms. They had come almost to the little knot of men before they were seen, and by this time Paulvitch had become assured that the beast meant no harm. The animal evidently was accustomed to the association of human beings. It occurred to the Russian that the ape represented a certain considerable money value,

and before they reached the sailors he had decided he should be the one to profit by it.

Pt When the men looked up and saw the oddly paired couple shuffling toward them they were filled with amazement, and started on a run toward the two. The ape showed no sign of fear. Instead he grasped each sailor by the shoulder and peered long and earnestly into his face. Having inspected them all he returned to Paulvitch's side, disappointment written strongly upon his countenance and in his carriage.

Pt The men were delighted with him. They gathered about, asking Paulvitch many questions, and examining his companion. The Russian told them that the ape was his -- nothing further would he offer -- but kept harping continually upon the same theme, "The ape is mine. The ape is mine." Tiring of Paulvitch, one of the men essayed a pleasantry. Circling about behind the ape he prodded the anthropoid in the back with a pin. Like a flash the beast wheeled upon its tormentor, and, in the briefest instant of turning, the placid, friendly animal was metamorphosed to a frenzied demon of rage. The broad grin that had sat upon the sailor's face as he perpetrated his little joke froze to an expression of terror. He attempted to dodge the long arms that reached for him; but, failing, drew a long knife that hung at his belt. With a single wrench the ape tore the weapon from the man's grasp and flung it to one side, then his yellow fangs were buried in the sailor's shoulder.

Pt With sticks and knives the man's companions fell upon the beast, while Paulvitch danced around the cursing, snarling pack mumbling and screaming pleas and threats. He saw his visions of wealth rapidly dissipating before the weapons of the sailors.

Pt The ape, however, proved no easy victim to the superior numbers that seemed fated to overwhelm him. Rising from the sailor who had precipitated the battle he shook his giant shoulders, freeing himself from two of the men that were clinging to his back, and with mighty blows of his open palms felled one after another of his attackers, leaping hither and thither with the agility of a small monkey.

Pt The fight had been witnessed by the captain and mate who were just landing from the Marjorie W., and Paulvitch saw these two now running forward with drawn revolvers while the two sailors who had brought them ashore trailed at their heels. The ape stood looking about

him at the havoc he had wrought, but whether he was awaiting a renewal of the attack or was deliberating which of his foes he should exterminate first Paulvitch could not guess. What he could guess, however, was that the moment the two officers came within firing distance of the beast they would put an end to him in short order unless something were done and done quickly to prevent. The ape had made no move to attack the Russian but even so the man was none too sure of what might happen were he to interfere with the savage beast, now thoroughly aroused to bestial rage, and with the smell of new spilled blood fresh in its nostrils. For an instant he hesitated, and then again there rose before him the dreams of affluence which this great anthropoid would doubtless turn to realities once Paulvitch had landed him safely in some great metropolis like London.

Pt The captain was shouting to him now to stand aside that he might have a shot at the animal; but instead Paulvitch shuffled to the ape's side, and though the man's hair quivered at its roots he mastered his fear and laid hold of the ape's arm.

Pt "Come!" he commanded, and tugged to pull the beast from among the sailors, many of whom were now sitting up in wide eyed fright or crawling away from their conqueror upon hands and knees.

Pt Slowly the ape permitted itself to be led to one side, nor did it show the slightest indication of a desire to harm the Russian. The captain came to a halt a few paces from the odd pair.

Pt "Get aside, Sabrov!" he commanded. "I'll put that brute where he won't chew up any more able seamen."

Pt "It wasn't his fault, captain," pleaded Paulvitch. "Please don't shoot him. The men started it -- they attacked him first. You see, he's perfectly gentle -- and he's mine -- he's mine -- he's mine! I won't let you kill him," he concluded, as his half-wrecked mentality pictured anew the pleasure that money would buy in London -- money that he could not hope to possess without some such windfall as the ape represented.

Pt The captain lowered his weapon. "The men started it, did they?" he repeated. "How about that?" and he turned toward the sailors who had by this time picked themselves from the ground, none of them much the worse for his experience except the fellow who had been the cause of it, and who would doubtless nurse a sore shoulder for a week or so.

Pt "Simpson done it," said one of the men. "He stuck a pin into the monk from behind, and the monk got him -- which served him bloomin' well right -- an' he got the rest of us, too, for which I can't blame him, since we all jumped him to once."

Pt The captain looked at Simpson, who sheepishly admitted the truth of the allegation, then he stepped over to the ape as though to discover for himself the sort of temper the beast possessed, but it was noticeable that he kept his revolver cocked and leveled as he did so. However, he spoke soothingly to the animal who squatted at the Russian's side looking first at one and then another of the sailors. As the captain approached him the ape half rose and waddled forward to meet him. Upon his countenance was the same strange, searching expression that had marked his scrutiny of each of the sailors he had first encountered. He came quite close to the officer and laid a paw upon one of the man's shoulders, studying his face intently for a long moment, then came the expression of disappointment accompanied by what was almost a human sigh, as he turned away to peer in the same curious fashion into the faces of the mate and the two sailors who had arrived with the officers. In each instance he sighed and passed on, returning at length to Paulvitch's side, where he squatted down once more; thereafter evincing little or no interest in any of the other men, and apparently forgetful of his recent battle with them.

Pt When the party returned aboard the Marjorie W., Paulvitch was accompanied by the ape, who seemed anxious to follow him. The captain interposed no obstacles to the arrangement, and so the great anthropoid was tacitly admitted to membership in the ship's company. Once aboard he examined each new face minutely, evincing the same disappointment in each instance that had marked his scrutiny of the others. The officers and scientists aboard often discussed the beast, but they were unable to account satisfactorily for the strange ceremony with which he greeted each new face. Had he been discovered upon the mainland, or any other place than the almost unknown island that had been his home, they would have concluded that he had formerly been a pet of man; but that theory was not tenable in the face of the isolation of his uninhabited island. He seemed continually to be searching for someone, and during the first days of the return voyage from the island he was often discovered nosing about in various parts of the ship; but after he had seen and examined each face of the ship's company, and explored every

corner of the vessel he lapsed into utter indifference of all about him. Even the Russian elicited only casual interest when he brought him food. At other times the ape appeared merely to tolerate him. He never showed affection for him, or for anyone else upon the Marjorie W., nor did he at any time evince any indication of the savage temper that had marked his resentment of the attack of the sailors upon him at the time that he had come among them.

Pt Most of his time was spent in the eye of the ship scanning the horizon ahead, as though he were endowed with sufficient reason to know that the vessel was bound for some port where there would be other human beings to undergo his searching scrutiny. All in all, Ajax, as he had been dubbed, was considered the most remarkable and intelligent ape that any one aboard the Marjorie W. ever had seen. Nor was his intelligence the only remarkable attribute he owned. His stature and physique were, for an ape, awe inspiring. That he was old was quite evident, but if his age had impaired his physical or mental powers in the slightest it was not apparent.

Pt And so at length the Marjorie W. came to England, and there the officers and the scientists, filled with compassion for the pitiful wreck of a man they had rescued from the jungles, furnished Paulvitch with funds and bid him and his Ajax Godspeed.

Pt Upon the dock and all through the journey to London the Russian had his hands full with Ajax. Each new face of the thousands that came within the anthropoid's ken must be carefully scrutinized, much to the horror of many of his victims; but at last, failing, apparently, to discover whom he sought, the great ape relapsed into morbid indifference, only occasionally evincing interest in a passing face.

Pt In London, Paulvitch went directly with his prize to a certain famous animal trainer. This man was much impressed with Ajax with the result that he agreed to train him for a lion's share of the profits of exhibiting him, and in the meantime to provide for the keep of both the ape and his owner.

Pt And so came Ajax to London, and there was forged another link in the chain of strange circumstances that were to affect the lives of many people.

Chapter 2

Pt Mr. Harold Moore was a bilious-countenanced, studious young man. He took himself very seriously, and life, and his work, which latter was the tutoring of the young son of a British nobleman. He felt that his charge was not making the progress that his parents had a right to expect, and he was now conscientiously explaining this fact to the boy's mother.

Pt "It's not that he isn't bright," he was saying; "if that were true I should have hopes of succeeding, for then I might bring to bear all my energies in overcoming his obtuseness; but the trouble is that he is exceptionally intelligent, and learns so quickly that I can find no fault in the matter of the preparation of his lessons. What concerns me, however, is the fact that he evidently takes no interest whatever in the subjects we are studying. He merely accomplishes each lesson as a task to be rid of as quickly as possible and I am sure that no lesson ever again enters his mind until the hours of study and recitation once more arrive. His sole interests seem to be feats of physical prowess and the reading of everything that he can get hold of relative to savage beasts and the lives and customs of uncivilized peoples; but particularly do stories of animals appeal to him. He will sit for hours together poring over the work of some African explorer, and upon two occasions I have found him setting up in bed at night reading Carl Hagenbeck's book on men and beasts."

Pt The boy's mother tapped her foot nervously upon the hearth rug.

Pt "You discourage this, of course?" she ventured.

Pt Mr. Moore shuffled embarrassedly.

Pt "I -- ah -- essayed to take the book from him," he replied, a slight flush mounting his sallow cheek; "but -- ah -- your son is quite muscular for one so young."

Pt "He wouldn't let you take it?" asked the mother.

Pt "He would not," confessed the tutor. "He was perfectly good natured about it; but he insisted upon pretending that he was a gorilla and that I was a chimpanzee attempting to steal food from him. He leaped upon me with the most savage growls I ever heard, lifted me completely above his head, hurled me upon his bed, and after going through a pantomime

indicative of choking me to death he stood upon my prostrate form and gave voice to a most fearsome shriek, which he explained was the victory cry of a bull ape. Then he carried me to the door, shoved me out into the hall and locked me from his room."

Pt For several minutes neither spoke again. It was the boy's mother who finally broke the silence.

Pt "It is very necessary, Mr. Moore," she said, "that you do everything in your power to discourage this tendency in Jack, he--"; but she got no further. A loud "Whoop!" from the direction of the window brought them both to their feet. The room was upon the second floor of the house, and opposite the window to which their attention had been attracted was a large tree, a branch of which spread to within a few feet of the sill. Upon this branch now they both discovered the subject of their recent conversation, a tall, well-built boy, balancing with ease upon the bending limb and uttering loud shouts of glee as he noted the terrified expressions upon the faces of his audience.

Pt The mother and tutor both rushed toward the window but before they had crossed half the room the boy had leaped nimbly to the sill and entered the apartment with them.

Pt "'The wild man from Borneo has just come to town,'" he sang, dancing a species of war dance about his terrified mother and scandalized tutor, and ending up by throwing his arms about the former's neck and kissing her upon either cheek.

Pt "Oh, Mother," he cried, "there's a wonderful, educated ape being shown at one of the music halls. Willie Grimsby saw it last night. He says it can do everything but talk. It rides a bicycle, eats with knife and fork, counts up to ten, and ever so many other wonderful things, and can I go and see it too? Oh, please, Mother -- please let me."

Pt Patting the boy's cheek affectionately, the mother shook her head negatively. "No, Jack," she said; "you know I do not approve of such exhibitions."

Pt "I don't see why not, Mother," replied the boy. "All the other fellows go and they go to the Zoo, too, and you'll never let me do even that. Anybody'd think I was a girl -- or a mollycoddle. Oh, Father," he

exclaimed, as the door opened to admit a tall gray-eyed man. "Oh, Father, can't I go?"

Pt "Go where, my son?" asked the newcomer.

Pt "He wants to go to a music hall to see a trained ape," said the mother, looking warningly at her husband.

Pt "Who, Ajax?" questioned the man.

Pt The boy nodded.

Pt "Well, I don't know that I blame you, my son," said the father, "I wouldn't mind seeing him myself. They say he is very wonderful, and that for an anthropoid he is unusually large. Let's all go, Jane -- what do you say?" And he turned toward his wife, but that lady only shook her head in a most positive manner, and turning to Mr. Moore asked him if it was not time that he and Jack were in the study for the morning recitations. When the two had left she turned toward her husband.

Pt "John," she said, "something must be done to discourage Jack's tendency toward anything that may excite the cravings for the savage life which I fear he has inherited from you. You know from your own experience how strong is the call of the wild at times. You know that often it has necessitated a stern struggle on your part to resist the almost insane desire which occasionally overwhelms you to plunge once again into the jungle life that claimed you for so many years, and at the same time you know, better than any other, how frightful a fate it would be for Jack, were the trail to the savage jungle made either alluring or easy to him."

Pt "I doubt if there is any danger of his inheriting a taste for jungle life from me," replied the man, "for I cannot conceive that such a thing may be transmitted from father to son. And sometimes, Jane, I think that in your solicitude for his future you go a bit too far in your restrictive measures. His love for animals -- his desire, for example, to see this trained ape -- is only natural in a healthy, normal boy of his age. Just because he wants to see Ajax is no indication that he would wish to marry an ape, and even should he, far be it from you Jane to have the right to cry 'shame!'" and John Clayton, Lord Greystoke, put an arm about his wife, laughing good-naturedly down into her upturned face before he bent his head and kissed her. Then, more seriously, he continued: "You have

never told Jack anything concerning my early life, nor have you permitted me to, and in this I think that you have made a mistake. Had I been able to tell him of the experiences of Tarzan of the Apes I could doubtless have taken much of the glamour and romance from jungle life that naturally surrounds it in the minds of those who have had no experience of it. He might then have profited by my experience, but now, should the jungle lust ever claim him, he will have nothing to guide him but his own impulses, and I know how powerful these may be in the wrong direction at times."

Pt But Lady Greystoke only shook her head as she had a hundred other times when the subject had claimed her attention in the past.

Pt "No, John," she insisted, "I shall never give my consent to the implanting in Jack's mind of any suggestion of the savage life which we both wish to preserve him from."

Pt It was evening before the subject was again referred to and then it was raised by Jack himself. He had been sitting, curled in a large chair, reading, when he suddenly looked up and addressed his father.

Pt "Why," he asked, coming directly to the point, "can't I go and see Ajax?"

Pt "Your mother does not approve," replied his father.

Pt "Do you?"

Pt "That is not the question," evaded Lord Greystoke. "It is enough that your mother objects."

Pt "I am going to see him," announced the boy, after a few moments of thoughtful silence. "I am not different from Willie Grimsby, or any other of the fellows who have been to see him. It did not harm them and it will not harm me. I could go without telling you; but I would not do that. So I tell you now, beforehand, that I am going to see Ajax."

Pt There was nothing disrespectful or defiant in the boy's tone or manner. His was merely a dispassionate statement of facts. His father could scarce repress either a smile or a show of the admiration he felt for the manly course his son had pursued.

Pt "I admire your candor, Jack," he said. "Permit me to be candid, as well. If you go to see Ajax without permission, I shall punish you. I have

never inflicted corporal punishment upon you, but I warn you that should you disobey your mother's wishes in this instance, I shall."

Pt "Yes, sir," replied the boy; and then: "I shall tell you, sir, when I have been to see Ajax."

Pt Mr. Moore's room was next to that of his youthful charge, and it was the tutor's custom to have a look into the boy's each evening as the former was about to retire. This evening he was particularly careful not to neglect his duty, for he had just come from a conference with the boy's father and mother in which it had been impressed upon him that he must exercise the greatest care to prevent Jack visiting the music hall where Ajax was being shown. So, when he opened the boy's door at about half after nine, he was greatly excited, though not entirely surprised to find the future Lord Greystoke fully dressed for the street and about to crawl from his open bed room window.

Pt Mr. Moore made a rapid spring across the apartment; but the waste of energy was unnecessary, for when the boy heard him within the chamber and realized that he had been discovered he turned back as though to relinquish his planned adventure.

Pt "Where were you going?" panted the excited Mr. Moore.

Pt "I am going to see Ajax," replied the boy, quietly.

Pt "I am astonished," cried Mr. Moore; but a moment later he was infinitely more astonished, for the boy, approaching close to him, suddenly seized him about the waist, lifted him from his feet and threw him face downward upon the bed, shoving his face deep into a soft pillow.

Pt "Be quiet," admonished the victor, "or I'll choke you."

Pt Mr. Moore struggled; but his efforts were in vain. Whatever else Tarzan of the Apes may or may not have handed down to his son he had at least bequeathed him almost as marvelous a physique as he himself had possessed at the same age. The tutor was as putty in the boy's hands. Kneeling upon him, Jack tore strips from a sheet and bound the man's hands behind his back. Then he rolled him over and stuffed a gag of the same material between his teeth, securing it with a strip wound about the back of his victim's head. All the while he talked in a low, conversational tone.

Pt "I am Waja, chief of the Waji," he explained, "and you are Mohammed Dubn, the Arab sheik, who would murder my people and steal my ivory," and he dexterously trussed Mr. Moore's hobbled ankles up behind to meet his hobbled wrists. "Ah -- ha! Villain! I have you in me power at last. I go; but I shall return!" And the son of Tarzan skipped across the room, slipped through the open window, and slid to liberty by way of the down spout from an eaves trough.

Pt Mr. Moore wriggled and struggled about the bed. He was sure that he should suffocate unless aid came quickly. In his frenzy of terror he managed to roll off the bed. The pain and shock of the fall jolted him back to something like sane consideration of his plight. Where before he had been unable to think intelligently because of the hysterical fear that had claimed him he now lay quietly searching for some means of escape from his dilemma. It finally occurred to him that the room in which Lord and Lady Greystoke had been sitting when he left them was directly beneath that in which he lay upon the floor. He knew that some time had elapsed since he had come up stairs and that they might be gone by this time, for it seemed to him that he had struggled about the bed, in his efforts to free himself, for an eternity. But the best that he could do was to attempt to attract attention from below, and so, after many failures, he managed to work himself into a position in which he could tap the toe of his boot against the floor. This he proceeded to do at short intervals, until, after what seemed a very long time, he was rewarded by hearing footsteps ascending the stairs, and presently a knock upon the door. Mr. Moore tapped vigorously with his toe -- he could not reply in any other way. The knock was repeated after a moment's silence. Again Mr. Moore tapped. Would they never open the door! Laboriously he rolled in the direction of succor. If he could get his back against the door he could then tap upon its base, when surely he must be heard. The knocking was repeated a little louder, and finally a voice called: "Mr. Jack!"

Pt It was one of the house men -- Mr. Moore recognized the fellow's voice. He came near to bursting a blood vessel in an endeavor to scream "come in" through the stifling gag. After a moment the man knocked again, quite loudly and again called the boy's name. Receiving no reply he turned the knob, and at the same instant a sudden recollection filled the tutor anew with numbing terror -- he had, himself, locked the door behind him when he had entered the room.

Pt He heard the servant try the door several times and then depart. Upon which Mr. Moore swooned.

Pt In the meantime Jack was enjoying to the full the stolen pleasures of the music hall. He had reached the temple of mirth just as Ajax's act was commencing, and having purchased a box seat was now leaning breathlessly over the rail watching every move of the great ape, his eyes wide in wonder. The trainer was not slow to note the boy's handsome, eager face, and as one of Ajax's biggest hits consisted in an entry to one or more boxes during his performance, ostensibly in search of a long-lost relative, as the trainer explained, the man realized the effectiveness of sending him into the box with the handsome boy, who, doubtless, would be terror stricken by proximity to the shaggy, powerful beast.

Pt When the time came, therefore, for the ape to return from the wings in reply to an encore the trainer directed its attention to the boy who chanced to be the sole occupant of the box in which he sat. With a spring the huge anthropoid leaped from the stage to the boy's side; but if the trainer had looked for a laughable scene of fright he was mistaken. A broad smile lighted the boy's features as he laid his hand upon the shaggy arm of his visitor. The ape, grasping the boy by either shoulder, peered long and earnestly into his face, while the latter stroked his head and talked to him in a low voice.

Pt Never had Ajax devoted so long a time to an examination of another as he did in this instance. He seemed troubled and not a little excited, jabbering and mumbling to the boy, and now caressing him, as the trainer had never seen him caress a human being before. Presently he clambered over into the box with him and snuggled down close to the boy's side. The audience was delighted; but they were still more delighted when the trainer, the period of his act having elapsed, attempted to persuade Ajax to leave the box. The ape would not budge. The manager, becoming excited at the delay, urged the trainer to greater haste, but when the latter entered the box to drag away the reluctant Ajax he was met by bared fangs and menacing growls.

Pt The audience was delirious with joy. They cheered the ape. They cheered the boy, and they hooted and jeered at the trainer and the manager, which luckless individual had inadvertently shown himself and attempted to assist the trainer.

Pt Finally, reduced to desperation and realizing that this show of mutiny upon the part of his valuable possession might render the animal worthless for exhibition purposes in the future if not immediately subdued, the trainer had hastened to his dressing room and procured a heavy whip. With this he now returned to the box; but when he had threatened Ajax with it but once he found himself facing two infuriated enemies instead of one, for the boy had leaped to his feet, and seizing a chair was standing ready at the ape's side to defend his new found friend. There was no longer a smile upon his handsome face. In his gray eyes was an expression which gave the trainer pause, and beside him stood the giant anthropoid growling and ready.

Pt What might have happened, but for a timely interruption, may only be surmised; but that the trainer would have received a severe mauling, if nothing more, was clearly indicated by the attitudes of the two who faced him.

Pt It was a pale-faced man who rushed into the Greystoke library to announce that he had found Jack's door locked and had been able to obtain no response to his repeated knocking and calling other than a strange tapping and the sound of what might have been a body moving about upon the floor.

Pt Four steps at a time John Clayton took the stairs that led to the floor above. His wife and the servant hurried after him. Once he called his son's name in a loud voice; but receiving no reply he launched his great weight, backed by all the undiminished power of his giant muscles, against the heavy door. With a snapping of iron butts and a splintering of wood the obstacle burst inward.

Pt At its foot lay the body of the unconscious Mr. Moore, across whom it fell with a resounding thud. Through the opening leaped Tarzan, and a moment later the room was flooded with light from a dozen electric bulbs.

Pt It was several minutes before the tutor was discovered, so completely had the door covered him; but finally he was dragged forth, his gag and bonds cut away, and a liberal application of cold water had hastened returning consciousness.

Pt "Where is Jack?" was John Clayton's first question, and then; "Who did this?" as the memory of Rokoff and the fear of a second abduction seized him.

Pt Slowly Mr. Moore staggered to his feet. His gaze wandered about the room. Gradually he collected his scattered wits. The [details](#) of his recent harrowing experience returned to him.

Pt "I tender my resignation, sir, to take effect at once," were his first words. "You do not need a tutor for your son -- what he needs is a wild animal trainer."

Pt "But where is he?" cried Lady Greystoke.

Pt "He has gone to see Ajax."

Pt It was with difficulty that Tarzan restrained a smile, and after satisfying himself that the tutor was more scared than injured, he ordered his closed car around and departed in the direction of a certain well-known music hall.

Chapter 3

Pt As the trainer, with raised lash, hesitated an instant at the entrance to the box where the boy and the ape confronted him, a tall broad-shouldered man pushed past him and entered. As his eyes fell upon the newcomer a slight flush mounted the boy's cheeks.

Pt "Father!" he exclaimed.

Pt The ape gave one look at the English lord, and then leaped toward him, calling out in excited jabbering. The man, his eyes going wide in astonishment, stopped as though turned to stone.

Pt "Akut!" he cried.

Pt The boy looked, bewildered, from the ape to his father, and from his father to the ape. The trainer's jaw dropped as he listened to what followed, for from the lips of the Englishman flowed the gutturals of an ape that were answered in kind by the huge anthropoid that now clung to him.

Pt And from the wings a hideously bent and disfigured old man watched the tableau in the box, his pock-marked features working spasmodically in varying expressions that might have marked every sensation in the gamut from pleasure to terror.

Pt "Long have I looked for you, Tarzan," said Akut. "Now that I have found you I shall come to your jungle and live there always."

Pt The man stroked the beast's head. Through his mind there was running rapidly a train of recollection that carried him far into the depths of the primeval African forest where this huge, man-like beast had fought shoulder to shoulder with him years before. He saw the black Mugambi wielding his deadly knob-stick, and beside them, with bared fangs and bristling whiskers, Sheeta the terrible; and pressing close behind the savage and the savage panther, the hideous apes of Akut. The man sighed. Strong within him surged the jungle lust that he had thought dead. Ah! if he could go back even for a brief month of it, to feel again the brush of leafy branches against his naked hide; to smell the musty rot of dead vegetation -- frankincense and myrrh to the jungle born; to sense the noiseless coming of the great carnivora upon his trail; to hunt and to be hunted; to kill! The picture was alluring. And then came

another picture -- a sweet-faced woman, still young and beautiful; friends; a home; a son. He shrugged his giant shoulders.

Pt "It cannot be, Akut," he said; "but if you would return, I shall see that it is done. You could not be happy here -- I may not be happy there."

Pt The trainer stepped forward. The ape bared his fangs, growling.

Pt "Go with him, Akut," said Tarzan of the Apes. "I will come and see you tomorrow."

Pt The beast moved sullenly to the trainer's side. The latter, at John Clayton's request, told where they might be found. Tarzan turned toward his son.

Pt "Come!" he said, and the two left the theater. Neither spoke for several minutes after they had entered the limousine. It was the boy who broke the silence.

Pt "The ape knew you," he said, "and you spoke together in the ape's tongue. How did the ape know you, and how did you learn his language?"

Pt And then, *briefly* and for the first time, Tarzan of the Apes told his son of his early life -- of the birth in the jungle, of the death of his parents, and of how Kala, the great she ape had suckled and raised him from infancy almost to manhood. He told him, too, of the dangers and the horrors of the jungle; of the great beasts that stalked one by day and by night; of the periods of drought, and of the cataclysmic rains; of hunger; of cold; of intense heat; of nakedness and fear and suffering. He told him of all those things that seem most horrible to the creature of civilization in the hope that the knowledge of them might expunge from the lad's mind any inherent *desire* for the jungle. Yet they were the very things that made the memory of the jungle what it was to Tarzan -- that made up the composite jungle life he loved. And in the telling he forgot one thing -- the principal thing -- that the boy at his side, listening with eager ears, was the son of Tarzan of the Apes.

Pt After the boy had been tucked away in bed -- and without the *threatened* punishment -- John Clayton told his wife of the events of the evening, and that he had at last acquainted the boy with the facts of his jungle life. The mother, who had long foreseen that her son must some time know of those frightful years during which his father had roamed the jungle, a naked, savage beast of prey, only shook her head,

hoping against hope that the lure she knew was still strong in the father's breast had not been transmitted to his son.

Pt Tarzan visited Akut the following day, but though Jack begged to be allowed to accompany him he was refused. This time Tarzan saw the pock-marked old owner of the ape, whom he did not recognize as the wily Paulvitch of former days. Tarzan, influenced by Akut's pleadings, broached the question of the ape's purchase; but Paulvitch would not name any price, saying that he would consider the matter.

Pt When Tarzan returned home Jack was all excitement to hear the details of his visit, and finally suggested that his father buy the ape and bring it home. Lady Greystoke was horrified at the suggestion. The boy was insistent. Tarzan explained that he had wished to purchase Akut and return him to his jungle home, and to this the mother assented. Jack asked to be allowed to visit the ape, but again he was met with flat refusal. He had the address, however, which the trainer had given his father, and two days later he found the opportunity to elude his new tutor -- who had replaced the terrified Mr. Moore -- and after a considerable search through a section of London which he had never before visited, he found the smelly little quarters of the pock-marked old man. The old fellow himself replied to his knocking, and when he stated that he had come to see Ajax, opened the door and admitted him to the little room which he and the great ape occupied. In former years Paulvitch had been a fastidious scoundrel; but ten years of hideous life among the cannibals of Africa had eradicated the last vestige of niceness from his habits. His apparel was wrinkled and soiled. His hands were unwashed, his few straggling locks uncombed. His room was a jumble of filthy disorder. As the boy entered he saw the great ape squatting upon the bed, the coverlets of which were a tangled wad of filthy blankets and ill-smelling quilts. At sight of the youth the ape leaped to the floor and shuffled forward. The man, not recognizing his visitor and fearing that the ape meant mischief, stepped between them, ordering the ape back to the bed.

Pt "He will not hurt me," cried the boy. "We are friends, and before, he was my father's friend. They knew one another in the jungle. My father is Lord Greystoke. He does not know that I have come here. My mother forbid my coming; but I wished to see Ajax, and I will pay you if you will let me come here often and see him."

Pt At the mention of the boy's identity Paulvitch's eyes narrowed. Since he had first seen Tarzan again from the wings of the theater there had been forming in his deadened brain the beginnings of a desire for revenge. It is a characteristic of the weak and criminal to attribute to others the misfortunes that are the result of their own wickedness, and so now it was that Alexis Paulvitch was slowly recalling the events of his past life and as he did so laying at the door of the man whom he and Rokoff had so assiduously attempted to ruin and murder all the misfortunes that had befallen him in the failure of their various schemes against their intended victim.

Pt He saw at first no way in which he could, with safety to himself, wreak vengeance upon Tarzan through the medium of Tarzan's son; but that great possibilities for revenge lay in the boy was apparent to him, and so he determined to cultivate the lad in the hope that fate would play into his hands in some way in the future. He told the boy all that he knew of his father's past life in the jungle and when he found that the boy had been kept in ignorance of all these things for so many years, and that he had been forbidden visiting the zoological gardens; that he had had to bind and gag his tutor to find an opportunity to come to the music hall and see Ajax, he guessed immediately the nature of the great fear that lay in the hearts of the boy's parents -- that he might crave the jungle as his father had craved it.

Pt And so Paulvitch encouraged the boy to come and see him often, and always he played upon the lad's craving for tales of the savage world with which Paulvitch was all too familiar. He left him alone with Akut much, and it was not long until he was surprised to learn that the boy could make the great beast understand him -- that he had actually learned many of the words of the primitive language of the anthropoids.

Pt During this period Tarzan came several times to visit Paulvitch. He seemed anxious to purchase Ajax, and at last he told the man frankly that he was prompted not only by a desire upon his part to return the beast to the liberty of his native jungle; but also because his wife feared that in some way her son might learn the whereabouts of the ape and through his attachment for the beast become imbued with the roving instinct which, as Tarzan explained to Paulvitch, had so influenced his own life.

Pt The Russian could scarce repress a smile as he listened to Lord Greystoke's words, since scarce a half hour had passed since the time

the future Lord Greystoke had been sitting upon the disordered bed jabbering away to Ajax with all the fluency of a born ape.

Pt It was during this interview that a plan occurred to Paulvitch, and as a result of it he agreed to accept a certain fabulous sum for the ape, and upon receipt of the money to deliver the beast to a vessel that was sailing south from Dover for Africa two days later. He had a double purpose in accepting Clayton's offer. Primarily, the money consideration influenced him strongly, as the ape was no longer a source of revenue to him, having consistently refused to perform upon the stage after having discovered Tarzan. It was as though the beast had suffered himself to be brought from his jungle home and exhibited before thousands of curious spectators for the sole purpose of searching out his long lost friend and master, and, having found him, considered further mingling with the common herd of humans unnecessary. However that may be, the fact remained that no amount of persuasion could influence him even to show himself upon the music hall stage, and upon the single occasion that the trainer attempted force the results were such that the unfortunate man considered himself lucky to have escaped with his life. All that saved him was the accidental presence of Jack Clayton, who had been permitted to visit the animal in the dressing room reserved for him at the music hall, and had immediately interfered when he saw that the savage beast meant serious mischief.

Pt And after the money consideration, strong in the heart of the Russian was the desire for revenge, which had been growing with constant brooding over the failures and miseries of his life, which he attributed to Tarzan; the latest, and by no means the least, of which was Ajax's refusal to longer earn money for him. The ape's refusal he traced directly to Tarzan, finally convincing himself that the ape man had instructed the great anthropoid to refuse to go upon the stage.

Pt Paulvitch's naturally malign disposition was aggravated by the weakening and warping of his mental and physical faculties through torture and privation. From cold, calculating, highly intelligent perversity it had deteriorated into the indiscriminating, dangerous menace of the mentally defective. His plan, however, was sufficiently cunning to at least cast a doubt upon the assertion that his mentality was wandering. It assured him first of the competence which Lord Greystoke had promised to pay him for the deportation of the ape, and then of revenge upon his

benefactor through the son he idolized. That part of his scheme was crude and brutal -- it lacked the refinement of torture that had marked the master strokes of the Paulvitch of old, when he had worked with that virtuoso of villainy, Nikolas Rokoff -- but it at least assured Paulvitch of immunity from responsibility, placing that upon the ape, who would thus also be punished for his refusal longer to support the Russian.

Pt Everything played with fiendish unanimity into Paulvitch's hands. As chance would have it, Tarzan's son overheard his father relating to the boy's mother the steps he was taking to return Akut safely to his jungle home, and having overheard he begged them to bring the ape home that he might have him for a play-fellow. Tarzan would not have been averse to this plan; but Lady Greystoke was horrified at the very thought of it. Jack pleaded with his mother; but all unavailingly. She was obdurate, and at last the lad appeared to acquiesce in his mother's decision that the ape must be returned to Africa and the boy to school, from which he had been absent on vacation.

Pt He did not attempt to visit Paulvitch's room again that day, but instead busied himself in other ways. He had always been well supplied with money, so that when necessity demanded he had no difficulty in collecting several hundred pounds. Some of this money he invested in various strange purchases which he managed to smuggle into the house, undetected, when he returned late in the afternoon.

Pt The next morning, after giving his father time to precede him and conclude his business with Paulvitch, the lad hastened to the Russian's room. Knowing nothing of the man's true character the boy dared not take him fully into his confidence for fear that the old fellow would not only refuse to aid him, but would report the whole affair to his father. Instead, he simply asked permission to take Ajax to Dover. He explained that it would relieve the old man of a tiresome journey, as well as placing a number of pounds in his pocket, for the lad purposed paying the Russian well.

Pt "You see," he went on, "there will be no danger of detection since I am supposed to be leaving on an afternoon train for school. Instead I will come here after they have left me on board the train. Then I can take Ajax to Dover, you see, and arrive at school only a day late. No one will be the wiser, no harm will be done, and I shall have had an extra day with Ajax before I lose him forever."

Pt The plan fitted perfectly with that which Paulvitch had in mind. Had he known what further the boy contemplated he would doubtless have entirely abandoned his own scheme of revenge and aided the boy whole heartedly in the consummation of the lad's, which would have been better for Paulvitch, could he have but read the future but a few short hours ahead.

Pt That afternoon Lord and Lady Greystoke bid their son good-bye and saw him safely settled in a first-class compartment of the railway carriage that would set him down at school in a few hours. No sooner had they left him, however, than he gathered his bags together, descended from the compartment and sought a cab stand outside the station. Here he engaged a cabby to take him to the Russian's [address](#). It was dusk when he arrived. He found Paulvitch awaiting him. The man was pacing the floor nervously. The ape was tied with a stout cord to the bed. It was the first time that Jack had ever seen Ajax thus secured. He looked questioningly at Paulvitch. The man, mumbling, explained that he believed the animal had guessed that he was to be sent away and he feared he would [attempt](#) to escape.

Pt Paulvitch carried another piece of cord in his hand. There was a noose in one end of it which he was continually playing with. He walked back and forth, up and down the room. His pock-marked features were working horribly as he talked silent to himself. The boy had never seen him thus -- it made him uneasy. At last Paulvitch stopped on the opposite side of the room, far from the ape.

Pt "Come here," he said to the lad. "I will show you how to secure the ape should he show signs of rebellion during the [trip](#)."

Pt The lad laughed. "It will not be necessary," he replied. "Ajax will do whatever I tell him to do."

Pt The old man stamped his foot angrily. "Come here, as I tell you," he repeated. "If you do not do as I say you shall not accompany the ape to Dover -- I will take no chances upon his escaping."

Pt Still smiling, the lad crossed the room and stood before the Russ.

Pt "Turn around, with your back toward me," directed the latter, "that I may show you how to bind him quickly."

Pt The boy did as he was bid, placing his hands behind him when Paulvitch told him to do so. Instantly the old man slipped the running noose over one of the lad's wrists, took a couple of half hitches about his other wrist, and knotted the cord.

Pt The moment that the boy was secured the attitude of the man changed. With an angry oath he wheeled his prisoner about, tripped him and hurled him violently to the floor, leaping upon his breast as he fell. From the bed the ape growled and struggled with his bonds. The boy did not cry out -- a trait inherited from his savage sire whom long years in the jungle following the death of his foster mother, Kala the great ape, had taught that there was none to come to the succor of the fallen.

Pt Paulvitch's fingers sought the lad's throat. He grinned down horribly into the face of his victim.

Pt "Your father ruined me," he mumbled. "This will pay him. He will think that the ape did it. I will tell him that the ape did it. That I left him alone for a few minutes, and that you sneaked in and the ape killed you. I will throw your body upon the bed after I have choked the life from you, and when I bring your father he will see the ape squatting over it," and the twisted fiend cackled in gloating laughter. His fingers closed upon the boy's throat.

Pt Behind them the growling of the maddened beast reverberated against the walls of the little room. The boy paled, but no other sign of fear or panic showed upon his countenance. He was the son of Tarzan. The fingers tightened their grip upon his throat. It was with difficulty that he breathed, gaspingly. The ape lunged against the stout cord that held him. Turning, he wrapped the cord about his hands, as a man might have done, and surged heavily backward. The great muscles stood out beneath his shaggy hide. There was a rending as of splintered wood -- the cord held, but a portion of the footboard of the bed came away.

Pt At the sound Paulvitch looked up. His hideous face went white with terror -- the ape was free.

Pt With a single bound the creature was upon him. The man shrieked. The brute wrenched him from the body of the boy. Great fingers sunk into the man's flesh. Yellow fangs gaped close to his throat -- he struggled, futilely -- and when they closed, the soul of Alexis Paulvitch passed into the keeping of the demons who had long been awaiting it.

Pt The boy struggled to his feet, assisted by Akut. For two hours under the instructions of the former the ape worked upon the knots that secured his friend's wrists. Finally they gave up their secret, and the boy was free. Then he opened one of his bags and drew forth some garments. His plans had been well made. He did not consult the beast, which did all that he directed. Together they slunk from the house, but no casual observer might have noted that one of them was an ape.

Chapter 4

Pt The killing of the friendless old Russian, Michael Sabrov, by his great trained ape, was a matter for newspaper comment for a few days. Lord Greystoke read of it, and while taking special precautions not to permit his name to become connected with the affair, kept himself well posted as to the police search for the anthropoid.

Pt As was true of the general public, his chief interest in the matter centered about the mysterious disappearance of the slayer. Or at least this was true until he learned, several days subsequent to the tragedy, that his son Jack had not reported at the public school en route for which they had seen him safely ensconced in a railway carriage. Even then the father did not connect the disappearance of his son with the mystery surrounding the whereabouts of the ape. Nor was it until a month later that careful investigation revealed the fact that the boy had left the train before it pulled out of the station at London, and the cab driver had been found who had driven him to the address of the old Russian, that Tarzan of the Apes realized that Akut had in some way been connected with the disappearance of the boy.

Pt Beyond the moment that the cab driver had deposited his fare beside the curb in front of the house in which the Russian had been quartered there was no clue. No one had seen either the boy or the ape from that instant -- at least no one who still lived. The proprietor of the house identified the picture of the lad as that of one who had been a frequent visitor in the room of the old man. Aside from this he knew nothing. And there, at the door of a grimy, old building in the slums of London, the searchers came to a blank wall -- baffled.

Pt The day following the death of Alexis Paulvitch a youth accompanying his invalid grandmother, boarded a steamer at Dover. The old lady was heavily veiled, and so weakened by age and sickness that she had to be wheeled aboard the vessel in an invalid chair.

Pt The boy would permit none but himself to wheel her, and with his own hands assisted her from the chair to the interior of their stateroom -- and that was the last that was seen of the old lady by the ship's company until the pair disembarked. The boy even insisted upon doing the work of their cabin steward, since, as he explained, his grandmother was

suffering from a nervous disposition that made the presence of strangers extremely distasteful to her.

Pt Outside the cabin -- and none there was aboard who knew what he did in the cabin -- the lad was just as any other healthy, normal English boy might have been. He mingled with his fellow passengers, became a prime favorite with the officers, and struck up numerous friendships among the common sailors. He was generous and unaffected, yet carried an air of dignity and strength of character that inspired his many new friends with admiration as well as affection for him.

Pt Among the passengers there was an American named Condon, a noted blackleg and crook who was "wanted" in a half dozen of the larger cities of the United States. He had paid little attention to the boy until on one occasion he had seen him accidentally display a roll of bank notes. From then on Condon cultivated the youthful Briton. He learned, easily, that the boy was traveling alone with his invalid grandmother, and that their destination was a small port on the west coast of Africa, a little below the equator; that their name was Billings, and that they had no friends in the little settlement for which they were bound. Upon the point of their purpose in visiting the place Condon found the boy reticent, and so he did not push the matter -- he had learned all that he cared to know as it was.

Pt Several times Condon attempted to draw the lad into a card game; but his victim was not interested, and the black looks of several of the other men passengers decided the American to find other means of transferring the boy's bank roll to his own pocket.

Pt At last came the day that the steamer dropped anchor in the lee of a wooded promontory where a score or more of sheet-iron shacks making an unsightly blot upon the fair face of nature proclaimed the fact that civilization had set its heel. Straggling upon the outskirts were the thatched huts of natives, picturesque in their primeval savagery, harmonizing with the background of tropical jungle and accentuating the squalid hideousness of the white man's pioneer architecture.

Pt The boy, leaning over the rail, was looking far beyond the man-made town deep into the God-made jungle. A little shiver of anticipation tingled his spine, and then, quite without volition, he found himself gazing into the loving eyes of his mother and the strong face of the father which mirrored, beneath its masculine strength, a love no less

than the mother's eyes proclaimed. He felt himself weakening in his [resolve](#). Nearby one of the ship's officers was shouting orders to a flotilla of native boats that was approaching to lighten the consignment of the steamer's cargo destined for this tiny post.

Pt "When does the next steamer for England touch here?" the boy asked.

Pt "The Emanuel ought to be along most any time now," replied the officer. "I figured we'd find her here," and he went on with his bellowing remarks to the dusty horde drawing close to the steamer's side.

Pt The task of lowering the boy's grandmother over the side to a waiting canoe was rather difficult. The lad [insisted](#) on being always at her side, and when at last she was safely ensconced in the bottom of the craft that was to bear them shoreward her grandson dropped catlike after her. So interested was he in seeing her comfortably disposed that he failed to notice the little package that had worked from his pocket as he assisted in lowering the sling that contained the old woman over the steamer's side, nor did he notice it even as it slipped out entirely and dropped into the sea.

Pt Scarcely had the boat containing the boy and the old woman started for the shore than Condon hailed a canoe upon the other side of the ship, and after bargaining with its owner finally lowered his baggage and himself aboard. Once ashore he kept out of sight of the two-story atrocity that bore the legend "Hotel" to lure unsuspecting wayfarers to its multitudinous discomforts. It was quite dark before he ventured to enter and arrange for accommodations.

Pt In a back room upon the second floor the lad was explaining, not without considerable difficulty, to his grandmother that he had decided to return to England upon the next steamer. He was endeavoring to make it plain to the old lady that she might remain in Africa if she wished but that for his part his conscience demanded that he return to his father and mother, who doubtless were even now suffering untold sorrow because of his absence; from which it may be assumed that his parents had not been acquainted with the plans that he and the old lady had made for their adventure into African wilds.

Pt Having come to a decision the lad felt a [sense](#) of [relief](#) from the worry that had haunted him for many sleepless nights. When he closed

his eyes in sleep it was to dream of a happy reunion with those at home. And as he dreamed, Fate, cruel and inexorable, crept stealthily upon him through the dark corridor of the squalid building in which he slept -- Fate in the form of the American crook, Condon.

Pt Cautiously the man approached the door of the lad's room. There he crouched listening until assured by the regular breathing of those within that both slept. Quietly he inserted a slim, skeleton key in the lock of the door. With deft fingers, long accustomed to the silent manipulation of the bars and bolts that guarded other men's property, Condon turned the key and the knob simultaneously. Gentle pressure upon the door swung it slowly inward upon its hinges. The man entered the room, closing the door behind him. The moon was temporarily overcast by heavy clouds. The interior of the apartment was shrouded in gloom. Condon groped his way toward the bed. In the far corner of the room something moved -- moved with a silent stealthiness which transcended even the trained silence of the burglar. Condon heard nothing. His attention was riveted upon the bed in which he thought to find a young boy and his helpless, invalid grandmother.

Pt The American sought only the bank roll. If he could possess himself of this without detection, well and good; but were he to meet resistance he was prepared for that too. The lad's clothes lay across a chair beside the bed. The American's fingers felt swiftly through them -- the pockets contained no roll of crisp, new notes. Doubtless they were beneath the pillows of the bed. He stepped closer toward the sleeper; his hand was already half way beneath the pillow when the thick cloud that had obscured the moon rolled aside and the room was flooded with light. At the same instant the boy opened his eyes and looked straight into those of Condon. The man was suddenly conscious that the boy was alone in the bed. Then he clutched for his victim's throat. As the lad rose to meet him Condon heard a low growl at his back, then he felt his wrists seized by the boy, and realized that beneath those tapering, white fingers played muscles of steel.

Pt He felt other hands at his throat, rough hairy hands that reached over his shoulders from behind. He cast a terrified glance backward, and the hairs of his head stiffened at the sight his eyes revealed, for grasping him from the rear was a huge, man-like ape. The bared fighting fangs of the anthropoid were close to his throat. The lad pinioned his wrists.

Neither uttered a sound. Where was the grandmother? Condon's eyes swept the room in a single all-inclusive glance. His eyes bulged in horror at the realization of the truth which that glance revealed. In the power of what creatures of hideous mystery had he placed himself! Frantically he fought to beat off the lad that he might turn upon the fearsome thing at his back. Freeing one hand he struck a savage blow at the lad's face. His act seemed to unloose a thousand devils in the hairy creature clinging to his throat. Condon heard a low and savage snarl. It was the last thing that the American ever heard in this life. Then he was dragged backward upon the floor, a heavy body fell upon him, powerful teeth fastened themselves in his jugular, his head whirled in the sudden blackness which rims eternity -- a moment later the ape rose from his prostrate form; but Condon did not know -- he was quite dead.

Pt The lad, horrified, sprang from the bed to lean over the body of the man. He knew that Akut had killed in his defense, as he had killed Michael Sabrov; but here, in savage Africa, far from home and friends what would they do to him and his faithful ape? The lad knew that the penalty of murder was death. He even knew that an accomplice might suffer the death penalty with the principal. Who was there who would plead for them? All would be against them. It was little more than a half-civilized community, and the chances were that they would drag Akut and him forth in the morning and hang them both to the nearest tree -- he had read of such things being done in America, and Africa was worse even and wilder than the great West of his mother's native land. Yes, they would both be hanged in the morning!

Pt Was there no escape? He thought in silence for a few moments, and then, with an exclamation of relief, he struck his palms together and turned toward his clothing upon the chair. Money would do anything! Money would save him and Akut! He felt for the bank roll in the pocket in which he had been accustomed to carry it. It was not there! Slowly at first and at last frantically he searched through the remaining pockets of his clothing. Then he dropped upon his hands and knees and examined the floor. Lighting the lamp he moved the bed to one side and, inch by inch, he felt over the entire floor. Beside the body of Condon he hesitated, but at last he nerved himself to touch it. Rolling it over he sought beneath it for the money. Nor was it there. He guessed that Condon had entered their room to rob; but he did not believe that the man had had time to possess himself of the money; however, as it was nowhere else, it must

be upon the body of the dead man. Again and again he went over the room, only to return each time to the corpse; but no where could he find the money.

Pt He was half-frantic with despair. What were they to do? In the morning they would be discovered and killed. For all his inherited size and strength he was, after all, only a little boy -- a frightened, homesick little boy -- reasoning faultily from the meager experience of childhood. He could think of but a single glaring fact -- they had killed a fellow man, and they were among savage strangers, thirsting for the blood of the first victim whom fate cast into their clutches. This much he had gleaned from penny-dreadfuls.

Pt And they must have money!

Pt Again he approached the corpse. This time resolutely. The ape squatted in a corner watching his young companion. The youth commenced to remove the American's clothing piece by piece, and, piece by piece, he examined each garment minutely. Even to the shoes he searched with painstaking care, and when the last article had been removed and scrutinized he dropped back upon the bed with dilated eyes that saw nothing in the present -- only a grim tableau of the future in which two forms swung silently from the limb of a great tree.

Pt How long he sat thus he did not know; but finally he was aroused by a noise coming from the floor below. Springing quickly to his feet he blew out the lamp, and crossing the floor silently locked the door. Then he turned toward the ape, his mind made up.

Pt Last evening he had been determined to start for home at the first opportunity, to beg the forgiveness of his parents for this mad adventure. Now he knew that he might never return to them. The blood of a fellow man was upon his hands -- in his morbid reflections he had long since ceased to attribute the death of Condon to the ape. The hysteria of panic had fastened the guilt upon himself. With money he might have bought justice; but penniless! -- ah, what hope could there be for strangers without money here?

Pt But what had become of the money? He tried to recall when last he had seen it. He could not, nor, could he, would he have been able to account for its disappearance, for he had been entirely unconscious of the falling of the little package from his pocket into the sea as he

clambered over the ship's side into the waiting canoe that bore him to shore.

Pt Now he turned toward Akut. "Come!" he said, in the language of the great apes.

Pt Forgetful of the fact that he wore only a thin pajama suit he led the way to the open window. Thrusting his head out he listened attentively. A single tree grew a few feet from the window. Nimble the lad sprang to its bole, clinging cat-like for an instant before he clambered quietly to the ground below. Close behind him came the great ape. Two hundred yards away a spur of the jungle ran close to the straggling town. Toward this the lad led the way. None saw them, and a moment later the jungle swallowed them, and John Clayton, future Lord Greystoke, passed from the eyes and the knowledge of men.

Pt It was late the following morning that a native houseman knocked upon the door of the room that had been assigned to Mrs. Billings and her grandson. Receiving no response he inserted his pass key in the lock, only to discover that another key was already there, but from the inside. He reported the fact to Herr Skopf, the proprietor, who at once made his way to the second floor where he, too, pounded vigorously upon the door. Receiving no reply he bent to the key hole in an attempt to look through into the room beyond. In so doing, being portly, he lost his balance, which necessitated putting a palm to the floor to maintain his equilibrium. As he did so he felt something soft and thick and wet beneath his fingers. He raised his open palm before his eyes in the dim light of the corridor and peered at it. Then he gave a little shudder, for even in the semi-darkness he saw a dark red stain upon his hand. Leaping to his feet he hurled his shoulder against the door. Herr Skopf is a heavy man -- or at least he was then -- I have not seen him for several years. The frail door collapsed beneath his weight, and Herr Skopf stumbled precipitately into the room beyond.

Pt Before him lay the greatest mystery of his life. Upon the floor at his feet was the dead body of a strange man. The neck was broken and the jugular severed as by the fangs of a wild beast. The body was entirely naked, the clothing being strewn about the corpse. The old lady and her grandson were gone. The window was open. They must have disappeared through the window for the door had been locked from the inside.

Pt But how could the boy have carried his invalid grandmother from a second story window to the ground? It was preposterous. Again Herr Skopf searched the small room. He noticed that the bed was pulled well away from the wall -- why? He looked beneath it again for the third or fourth time. The two were gone, and yet his judgment told him that the old lady could not have gone without porters to carry her down as they had carried her up the previous day.

Pt Further search deepened the mystery. All the clothing of the two was still in the room -- if they had gone then they must have gone naked or in their night clothes. Herr Skopf shook his head; then he scratched it. He was baffled. He had never heard of Sherlock Holmes or he would have lost no time in invoking the aid of that celebrated sleuth, for here was a real mystery: An old woman -- an invalid who had to be carried from the ship to her room in the hotel -- and a handsome lad, her grandson, had entered a room on the second floor of his hostelry the day before. They had had their evening meal served in their room -- that was the last that had been seen of them. At nine the following morning the corpse of a strange man had been the sole occupant of that room. No boat had left the harbor in the meantime -- there was not a railroad within hundreds of miles -- there was no other white settlement that the two could reach under several days of arduous marching accompanied by a well-equipped safari. They had simply vanished into thin air, for the native he had sent to inspect the ground beneath the open window had just returned to report that there was no sign of a footstep there, and what sort of creatures were they who could have dropped that distance to the soft turf without leaving spoor? Herr Skopf shuddered. Yes, it was a great mystery -- there was something uncanny about the whole thing -- he hated to think about it, and he dreaded the coming of night.

Pt It was a great mystery to Herr Skopf -- and, doubtless, still is.

Chapter 5

Pt Captain Armand Jacot of the Foreign Legion sat upon an outspread saddle blanket at the foot of a stunted palm tree. His broad shoulders and his close-cropped head rested in luxurious ease against the rough bole of the palm. His long legs were stretched straight before him overlapping the meager blanket, his spurs buried in the sandy soil of the little desert oasis. The captain was taking his ease after a long day of weary riding across the shifting sands of the desert.

Pt Lazily he puffed upon his cigarette and watched his orderly who was preparing his evening meal. Captain Armand Jacot was well satisfied with himself and the world. A little to his right rose the noisy activity of his troop of sun-tanned veterans, released for the time from the irksome trammels of discipline, relaxing tired muscles, laughing, joking, and smoking as they, too, prepared to eat after a twelve-hour fast. Among them, silent and taciturn, squatted five white-robed Arabs, securely bound and under heavy guard.

Pt It was the sight of these that filled Captain Armand Jacot with the pleasurable satisfaction of a duty well-performed. For a long, hot, gaunt month he and his little troop had scoured the places of the desert waste in search of a band of marauders to the sin-stained account of which were charged innumerable thefts of camels, horses, and goats, as well as murders enough to have sent the whole unsavory gang to the guillotine several times over.

Pt A week before, he had come upon them. In the ensuing battle he had lost two of his own men, but the punishment inflicted upon the marauders had been severe almost to extinction. A half dozen, perhaps, had escaped; but the balance, with the exception of the five prisoners, had expiated their crimes before the nickel jacketed bullets of the legionaries. And, best of all, the ring leader, Achmet ben Houdin, was among the prisoners.

Pt From the prisoners Captain Jacot permitted his mind to traverse the remaining miles of sand to the little garrison post where, upon the morrow, he should find awaiting him with eager welcome his wife and little daughter. His eyes softened to the memory of them, as they always did. Even now he could see the beauty of the mother reflected in the

childish lines of little Jeanne's face, and both those faces would be smiling up into his as he swung from his tired mount late the following afternoon. Already he could feel a soft cheek pressed close to each of his -- velvet against leather.

Pt His reverie was broken in upon by the voice of a sentry summoning a non-commissioned officer. Captain Jacot raised his eyes. The sun had not yet set; but the shadows of the few trees huddled about the water hole and of his men and their horses stretched far away into the east across the now golden sand. The sentry was pointing in this direction, and the corporal, through narrowed lids, was searching the distance. Captain Jacot rose to his feet. He was not a man content to see through the eyes of others. He must see for himself. Usually he saw things long before others were aware that there was anything to see -- a trait that had won for him the sobriquet of Hawk. Now he saw, just beyond the long shadows, a dozen specks rising and falling among the sands. They disappeared and reappeared, but always they grew larger. Jacot recognized them immediately. They were horsemen -- horsemen of the desert. Already a sergeant was running toward him. The entire camp was straining its eyes into the distance. Jacot gave a few terse orders to the sergeant who saluted, turned upon his heel and returned to the men. Here he gathered a dozen who saddled their horses, mounted and rode out to meet the strangers. The remaining men disposed themselves in readiness for instant action. It was not entirely beyond the range of possibilities that the horsemen riding thus swiftly toward the camp might be friends of the prisoners bent upon the release of their kinsmen by a sudden attack. Jacot doubted this, however, since the strangers were evidently making no attempt to conceal their presence. They were galloping rapidly toward the camp in plain view of all. There might be treachery lurking beneath their fair appearance; but none who knew The Hawk would be so gullible as to hope to trap him thus.

Pt The sergeant with his detail met the Arabs two hundred yards from the camp. Jacot could see him in conversation with a tall, white-robed figure -- evidently the leader of the band. Presently the sergeant and this Arab rode side by side toward camp. Jacot awaited them. The two reined in and dismounted before him.

Pt "Sheik Amor ben Khatour," announced the sergeant by way of introduction.

Pt Captain Jacot eyed the newcomer. He was acquainted with nearly every principal Arab within a radius of several hundred miles. This man he never had seen. He was a tall, weather beaten, sour looking man of sixty or more. His eyes were narrow and evil. Captain Jacot did not relish his appearance.

Pt "Well?" he asked, tentatively.

Pt The Arab came directly to the point.

Pt "Achmet ben Houdin is my sister's son," he said. "If you will give him into my keeping I will see that he sins no more against the laws of the French."

Pt Jacot shook his head. "That cannot be," he replied. "I must take him back with me. He will be properly and fairly tried by a civil court. If he is innocent he will be released."

Pt "And if he is not innocent?" asked the Arab.

Pt "He is charged with many murders. For any one of these, if he is proved guilty, he will have to die."

Pt The Arab's left hand was hidden beneath his burnous. Now he withdrew it disclosing a large goatskin purse, bulging and heavy with coins. He opened the mouth of the purse and let a handful of the contents trickle into the palm of his right hand -- all were pieces of good French gold. From the size of the purse and its bulging proportions Captain Jacot concluded that it must contain a small fortune. Sheik Amor ben Khatour dropped the spilled gold pieces one by one back into the purse. Jacot was eyeing him narrowly. They were alone. The sergeant, having introduced the visitor, had withdrawn to some little distance -- his back was toward them. Now the sheik, having returned all the gold pieces, held the bulging purse outward upon his open palm toward Captain Jacot.

Pt "Achmet ben Houdin, my sister's son, MIGHT escape tonight," he said. "Eh?"

Pt Captain Armand Jacot flushed to the roots of his close-cropped hair. Then he went very white and took a half-step toward the Arab. His fists were clenched. Suddenly he thought better of whatever impulse was moving him.

Pt "Sergeant!" he called. The non-commissioned officer hurried toward him, saluting as his heels clicked together before his superior.

Pt "Take this black dog back to his people," he ordered. "See that they leave at once. Shoot the first man who comes within range of camp tonight."

Pt Sheik Amor ben Khatour drew himself up to his full height. His evil eyes narrowed. He raised the bag of gold level with the eyes of the French officer.

Índice - Versão em Português

[1 - Capítulo 1](#)

[2 - Capítulo 2](#)

[3 - Capítulo 3](#)

[4 - Capítulo 4](#)

[5 - Capítulo 5](#)

1 - Capítulo 1

En O escaler do Marjorie W. descia flutuando pelo largo Ugambi, levado pela maré e pela corrente. A tripulação descansava depois do trabalho pesado de remar contra a correnteza. Três milhas abaixo deles, o Marjorie W. esperava que voltassem para içar o escaler nos turcos. Logo, todos os homens desviaram os olhos das conversas e devaneios para a margem norte. Ali, um homem estranho gritava para eles com uma voz aguda e rachada, os braços magros estendidos.

En "Que diabos é isso?", disse um dos tripulantes.

En "Um homem branco!", murmurou o imediato, e então disse: "Aos remos, rapazes, vamos até lá ver o que ele quer."

En Quando se aproximaram da margem, viram uma criatura muito magra, com poucos cabelos brancos, emaranhados e sujos. Estava nu, exceto por uma tanga. Lágrimas escorriam por suas bochechas encovadas e marcadas de varíola. Ele falava com eles numa língua estranha.

En "Russo", arriscou o imediato. "Você entende inglês?", gritou para o homem.

En Ele entendia, e em inglês quebrado implorou que o tirassem daquele país terrível. Uma vez a bordo do Marjorie W., o estranho contou uma história triste de fome, sofrimento e tortura que durara dez anos. Não disse como tinha ido parar na África. Os homens acharam que ele tinha esquecido a vida antes desses anos terríveis. Também não contou seu nome verdadeiro, então só o conheceram como Michael Sabrov. Ele não se parecia em nada com o forte, mas desonesto, Alexis Paulvitch que fora um dia.

En Fazia dez anos que o russo tinha escapado da morte enquanto seu amigo Rokoff morria. Muitas vezes durante esses anos, Paulvitch amaldiçoou seu destino. Desejava ter morrido em vez de sofrer tanto.

En Paulvitch correu para a selva quando viu as feras de Tarzan e seu senhor selvagem invadirem o convés do Kincaid. Com medo de que Tarzan o seguisse e capturasse, continuou tropeçando cada vez mais fundo na selva. Por fim, caiu nas mãos de uma tribo canibal selvagem que já conhecia a crueldade de Rokoff. Por algum motivo estranho, o

chefe salvou Paulvitch da morte, mas só para lhe dar uma vida de miséria e tortura. Por dez anos ele foi a vítima da tribo. Mulheres e crianças batiam nele e jogavam pedras. Guerreiros o cortavam, feriam e marcavam. Ele também sofreu de muitas febres mortais. Ainda assim, não morreu. A varíola também o atacou, deixando marcas feias no corpo. Por causa da tribo e de todos esses horrores, o rosto de Alexis Paulvitch mudou tanto que nem sua própria mãe o reconheceria. Seu cabelo escuro e grosso virou alguns fios finos, amarelo-esbranquiçados. Seus braços e pernas se curvaram de forma estranha, e ele andava de modo fraco e arrastado, o corpo dobrado para frente. Seus dentes tinham sumido, arrancados por seus senhores selvagens. Até sua mente era só uma sombra do que fora um dia.

En Levaram-no a bordo do Marjorie W. e o alimentaram e cuidaram dele. Ele ficou um pouco mais forte, mas sua aparência nunca melhorou. Tinham encontrado um ser humano arruinado, e foi isso que ele continuou sendo até a morte. Embora ainda estivesse na casa dos trinta, Alexis Paulvitch podia passar por um homem de oitenta anos. A natureza o fez sofrer mais do que o homem que o tinha ajudado nos crimes.

En Alexis Paulvitch não pensava em vingança. Só sentia um ódio surdo pelo homem que ele e Rokoff tinham tentado destruir e falhado. Também odiava a memória de Rokoff, porque Rokoff o levava a esses horrores. Odiava a polícia de muitas cidades, porque tivera que fugir dela. Odiava a lei, a ordem, e quase tudo mais. Cada momento acordado era cheio de ódio doentio e amargo. Por dentro, ele tinha ficado tão feio quanto por fora. Tinha pouco contato com os homens que o salvaram. Estava fraco demais para trabalhar e amargo demais para companhia, então logo o deixaram sozinho.

En O Marjorie W. tinha sido contratado por um grupo de industriais ricos. Estava equipado com um laboratório e uma equipe de cientistas. Foram mandados para achar um produto natural que os industriais vinham comprando da América do Sul por um preço muito alto. Ninguém no navio sabia qual era o produto, exceto os cientistas. Isso não importa para nós, exceto que levou o navio a uma ilha na costa da África depois que Alexis Paulvitch subiu a bordo.

En O navio ficou ancorado na costa por várias semanas. A vida a bordo ficou monótona e difícil para a tripulação. Eles iam à terra com

frequência, e por fim Paulvitch pediu para ir junto. Ele também estava cansado da mesma vida chata no navio.

En A ilha era coberta de árvores, e a selva densa crescia quase até a praia. Os cientistas foram bem para o interior, procurando a coisa valiosa que histórias locais tinham dito que podia ser encontrada ali em grande quantidade. A tripulação pescava, caçava e explorava. Paulvitch andava de um lado para outro na praia, ou deitava na sombra das árvores grandes perto dela. Um dia os homens estavam por perto, olhando o corpo de uma pantera morta por um deles durante uma caçada no interior. Paulvitch dormia debaixo de uma árvore quando uma mão tocou seu ombro. Ele acordou assustado e viu um macaco enorme sentado ao seu lado, olhando-o com atenção. Ficou muito assustado. Olhou para os marinheiros, mas estavam a umas duzentas jardas. O macaco tocou seu ombro de novo e fez sons suaves e súplicas. Paulvitch não viu ameaça nos olhos nem na postura do animal. Levantou-se devagar, e o macaco se ergueu ao seu lado.

En Curvado, o homem se arrastou com cuidado em direção aos marinheiros. O macaco foi junto, segurando um dos seus braços. Estavam quase chegando ao pequeno grupo de homens antes que alguém os visse, e nessa hora Paulvitch já tinha certeza de que a fera não queria fazer mal. O animal parecia acostumado a estar perto de pessoas. Paulvitch então pensou que o macaco valia muito dinheiro, e antes de chegarem aos marinheiros já tinha decidido que devia ser ele a lucrar com isso.

En Quando os homens olharam e viram o par estranho vindo em direção a eles, ficaram espantados e correram ao encontro dos dois. O macaco não mostrou medo. Em vez disso, segurou cada marinheiro pelo ombro e olhou de perto no rosto de cada um. Depois de examinar todos, voltou para Paulvitch, parecendo muito desapontado.

En Os homens gostaram do macaco. Se reuniram ao redor de Paulvitch e fizeram muitas perguntas. Olharam para seu companheiro. Paulvitch disse que o macaco era dele. Não disse mais nada. Repetiu: "O macaco é meu. O macaco é meu." Um homem ficou cansado de Paulvitch. Decidiu fazer uma brincadeira. Foi atrás do macaco e o cutucou com um alfinete. O macaco se virou muito rápido. Num instante, o animal amigável virou um monstro furioso. O marinheiro estava sorrindo, mas depois ficou com muito medo. Tentou fugir dos braços

longos do macaco. Não conseguiu. Pegou uma faca longa do cinto. O macaco tirou a faca da mão dele e a jogou fora. Depois mordeu o ombro do marinheiro com os dentes amarelos.

En Os companheiros do homem atacaram o macaco com paus e facas. Paulvitch pulava ao redor do grupo furioso e xingando, implorando, gritando e ameaçando. Via seus sonhos de riqueza desaparecerem rápido diante das armas dos marinheiros.

En Mas o macaco não foi fácil de vencer, mesmo contra tantos atacantes. Levantou-se do marinheiro que tinha começado a briga, sacudiu os ombros enormes e jogou fora dois homens que seguravam suas costas. Depois derrubou um atacante atrás do outro com golpes fortes das mãos abertas. Se movia rápido de um lugar para outro, como um macaquinho pequeno.

En O capitão e o imediato tinham visto a briga quando estavam desembarcando do Marjorie W. Paulvitch os viu correndo em direção à cena com revólveres na mão, seguidos pelos dois marinheiros que os tinham trazido à praia. O macaco ficou olhando o estrago que tinha feito, e Paulvitch não sabia dizer se ele estava pronto para atacar de novo ou escolhendo quem matar primeiro. O que Paulvitch sabia era que se os oficiais chegassem perto o bastante, logo atirariam na fera a menos que algo fosse feito rápido. O macaco não tinha atacado Paulvitch, mas o russo ainda não tinha certeza do que aconteceria se tentasse parar o animal furioso, agora selvagem de raiva e sentindo cheiro de sangue fresco. Hesitou um momento, depois pensou de novo na riqueza que aquele grande macaco poderia trazer se fosse levado em segurança para uma grande cidade como Londres.

En O capitão agora gritava para Paulvitch sair da frente para poder atirar no animal. Em vez disso, Paulvitch se arrastou até o lado do macaco. Seu cabelo tremia de medo, mas ele se forçou a ficar calmo e segurou o braço do macaco.

En "Venha!", ordenou, e puxou a fera para longe dos marinheiros. Muitos deles agora estavam sentados, olhos arregalados de medo, ou se arrastando de joelhos e mãos para longe de quem os tinha vencido.

En Devagar, o macaco se deixou levar para o lado, e não mostrou sinal de querer machucar o russo. O capitão parou a poucos passos do par estranho.

En "Saia da frente, Sabrov!", ordenou. "Vou colocar essa fera num lugar onde ela não morda mais nenhum marinheiro capaz."

En "A culpa não foi dele, capitão", disse Paulvitch. "Por favor, não atire nele. Os homens começaram a briga. Eles o atacaram primeiro. Ele é muito manso, e é meu! Não vou deixar você matá-lo." Sua mente confusa pensou de novo nos prazeres que o dinheiro podia comprar em Londres. Ele não podia ter esse dinheiro sem algo de sorte como aquele macaco.

En O capitão abaixou a arma. "Os homens começaram, foi?", disse. "É isso mesmo?" Depois se virou para os marinheiros, que já tinham se levantado. Nenhum deles estava muito machucado, exceto o homem que tinha causado o problema, e ele provavelmente teria o ombro dolorido por uma semana ou mais.

En "Foi o Simpson", disse um dos homens. "Ele espetou um alfinete no macaco por trás, e o macaco pegou ele. Bem feito pra ele. E o macaco pegou o resto de nós também. Não posso culpar ele porque todos atacamos ao mesmo tempo."

En O capitão olhou para Simpson, que admitiu, envergonhado, que era verdade. Então o capitão foi até o macaco, como se quisesse ver o temperamento da fera por si mesmo, mas manteve o revólver engatilhado e apontado. Falou gentilmente com o animal, que estava sentado ao lado do russo, olhando de um marinheiro para outro. Quando o capitão se aproximou, o macaco se levantou pela metade e foi em sua direção. Tinha o mesmo olhar estranho e investigativo que mostrara antes com os marinheiros. Chegou bem perto e colocou uma pata no ombro do homem, estudando seu rosto por um bom tempo. Depois pareceu desapontado e soltou quase um suspiro humano. Virou-se para olhar de perto o imediato e os dois marinheiros que tinham vindo com os oficiais. Cada vez suspirava e seguia adiante, e por fim voltou para Paulvitch e sentou de novo ao seu lado. Depois disso, mostrou pouco ou nenhum interesse pelos outros homens e pareceu esquecer a briga.

En Quando o grupo voltou ao Marjorie W., Paulvitch estava com o macaco, e o macaco parecia ansioso para segui-lo. O capitão não impediu isso, então o grande macaco foi silenciosamente aceito como parte da tripulação do navio. Uma vez a bordo, ele examinou cada rosto novo bem de perto e mostrou o mesmo desapontamento toda vez. Os

oficiais e cientistas falavam muito sobre ele, mas não conseguiam explicar o jeito estranho como cumprimentava cada pessoa nova. Se tivesse sido encontrado em terra firme, poderiam pensar que já tinha sido animal de estimação de alguém. Mas essa ideia não fazia sentido, já que sua ilha era vazia e isolada do mundo. Ele sempre parecia estar procurando alguém. Durante os primeiros dias da viagem de volta, era comum encontrá-lo farejando em diferentes partes do navio. Mas depois de ter visto todos e explorado cada canto, ficou completamente indiferente a tudo ao redor. Até o russo recebia só um olhar rápido quando trazia comida. Em outros momentos, o macaco parecia apenas tolerá-lo. Nunca mostrou afeto por Paulvitch nem por ninguém mais no Marjorie W., e nunca mais mostrou a raiva selvagem que tinha aparecido quando os marinheiros o atacaram pela primeira vez.

En Passava a maior parte do tempo na proa do navio, olhando o horizonte à frente. Parecia saber que o navio ia para um porto onde haveria mais pessoas para examinar. No geral, Ajax (como o chamavam) era considerado o macaco mais incrível e inteligente que qualquer um no Marjorie W. já tinha visto. Sua inteligência não era sua única qualidade impressionante. Seu tamanho e corpo eram muito impressionantes para um macaco. Era claramente velho, mas a idade não parecia ter reduzido suas capacidades físicas ou mentais.

En Por fim o Marjorie W. chegou à Inglaterra, e ali os oficiais e cientistas sentiram pena do pobre homem que tinham resgatado da selva. Deram dinheiro a Paulvitch e desejaram a ele e a seu Ajax uma viagem segura.

En No cais e durante a viagem até Londres, o russo teve trabalho de sobra com Ajax. Ele tinha que examinar cada rosto novo na multidão, o que assustava muita gente. Mas no fim, parecia incapaz de encontrar a pessoa que procurava. Então o grande macaco ficou tristemente indiferente e só às vezes mostrava interesse por um rosto que passava.

En Em Londres, Paulvitch foi direto a um famoso treinador de animais com seu prêmio. O homem ficou muito impressionado com Ajax. Concordou em treiná-lo por uma boa parte do dinheiro das exposições, e por enquanto também pagaria pelo macaco e seu dono.

En Assim Ajax chegou a Londres, e mais um elo estranho foi adicionado à cadeia de acontecimentos que afetaria muitas vidas.

2 - Capítulo 2

En O senhor Harold Moore era um jovem sério, de rosto adoentado. Levava muito a sério a si mesmo, a vida e seu trabalho. Seu trabalho era dar aulas particulares ao jovem filho de um nobre britânico. Sentia que o menino não estava progredindo como os pais tinham direito de esperar, e agora explicava isso com cuidado à mãe do menino.

En "Não é que ele não seja esperto", disse. "Se fosse isso, eu teria esperança, porque então poderia usar toda a minha energia para vencer sua falta de inteligência. Mas o problema é que ele é muito inteligente, e aprende tão rápido que não consigo achar falha no jeito como prepara as lições. O que me preocupa é que ele parece não ter interesse nenhum pelos assuntos que estudamos. Faz cada lição apenas como uma tarefa que quer terminar rápido, e tenho certeza de que ele nunca pensa nisso de novo até chegar a hora de estudar outra vez. Parece interessado só em provas de força física e em ler qualquer coisa sobre animais selvagens e a vida e costumes de povos não civilizados. Histórias sobre animais o interessam especialmente. Ele fica horas lendo livros de exploradores africanos, e duas vezes eu o encontrei sentado na cama à noite lendo o livro de Carl Hagenbeck sobre homens e feras."

En A mãe do menino batia o pé nervosamente no tapete perto da lareira.

En "O senhor desencoraja isso, é claro?", perguntou ela.

En O senhor Moore se remexeu, sem jeito.

En "Eu... ah... tentei tirar o livro dele", respondeu, e um pouco de cor subiu à sua bochecha pálida. "Mas... ah... seu filho é bem forte para alguém tão novo."

En "Ele não deixou o senhor tirar?", perguntou a mãe.

En "Não deixou", disse o tutor. "Foi bem-humorado sobre isso, mas insistiu em fingir que era um gorila e eu era um chimpanzé tentando roubar comida dele. Pulou em cima de mim com os rosnados mais selvagens que já ouvi, me ergueu bem acima da cabeça, me jogou na cama dele e agiu como se estivesse me sufocando até a morte. Depois ficou de pé sobre mim e soltou um grito terrível, que disse ser o grito de

vitória de um macaco macho. Depois disso, me carregou até a porta, me empurrou para o corredor e trancou a porta do quarto."

En Por vários minutos, nenhum dos dois falou. Por fim, a mãe do menino quebrou o silêncio.

En "É muito necessário, senhor Moore", disse ela, "que o senhor faça tudo que puder para impedir que Jack faça isso. Ele..." Mas não conseguiu dizer mais nada. Um alto "Uhu!" vindo da janela fez os dois pularem. O quarto ficava no segundo andar, e do outro lado da janela havia uma árvore grande com um galho chegando perto do parapeito. Nesse galho, viram agora a pessoa de quem estavam falando. Era um menino alto e forte, de pé com facilidade no galho curvado, gritando de alegria ao ver as expressões assustadas nos rostos dos dois.

En A mãe e o tutor correram para a janela. Mas antes de atravessarem metade do cômodo, o menino pulou rápido para o parapeito e entrou.

En "'O homem selvagem de Bornéu acabou de chegar à cidade'", cantou ele. Dançou ao redor da mãe assustada e do tutor chocado como um guerreiro. Depois pôs os braços ao redor do pescoço da mãe e beijou as duas bochechas dela.

En "Ai, mamãe", gritou, "tem um macaco maravilhoso e educado sendo exibido num music hall. O Willie Grimsby viu ontem à noite. Ele diz que o bicho faz tudo menos falar. Anda de bicicleta, come com faca e garfo, conta até dez e faz muitas outras coisas incríveis. Posso ir ver também? Ah, por favor, mamãe, por favor, me deixa ir."

En A mãe acariciou gentilmente a bochecha do menino e balançou a cabeça. "Não, Jack", disse. "Você sabe que eu não aprovo esse tipo de espetáculo."

En "Não vejo por que não, mamãe", respondeu o menino. "Todos os outros meninos vão, e vão ao zoológico também. A senhora nunca me deixa fazer nem isso. Qualquer um pensaria que sou uma menina, ou um mole. Ai, papai", exclamou quando a porta se abriu e um homem alto de olhos cinzentos entrou. "Ai, papai, eu posso ir?"

En "Ir aonde, meu filho?", perguntou o recém-chegado.

En "Ele quer ir a um music hall ver um macaco treinado", disse a mãe, olhando de aviso para o marido.

En "Quem, o Ajax?", perguntou o homem.

En O menino balançou a cabeça, concordando.

En "Bem, não posso culpar você, meu filho", disse o pai. "Eu mesmo gostaria de vê-lo. Dizem que é muito incrível, e muito grande para um macaco. Vamos todos, Jane. O que você acha?" Ele se virou para a esposa, mas ela só balançou a cabeça com firmeza. Depois perguntou ao senhor Moore se já era hora dele e de Jack irem ao gabinete para as lições da manhã. Depois que os dois saíram, ela se virou para o marido.

En "John", disse ela, "algo precisa ser feito para impedir que Jack goste de qualquer coisa que possa lhe dar vontade de vida selvagem. Temo que ele tenha herdado isso de você. Você sabe, pela sua própria vida, quão forte pode ser o chamado da selva. Sabe como tem sido difícil para você resistir ao desejo forte de voltar à vida na selva. E sabe melhor do que ninguém quão terrível seria para Jack se a selva selvagem parecesse tentadora ou fácil para ele."

En "Duvido que ele possa herdar de mim o gosto pela vida na selva", respondeu o homem. "Não acredito que uma coisa dessas possa passar de pai para filho. E às vezes, Jane, acho que você é rígida demais tentando protegê-lo. O amor dele por animais, por exemplo, e o desejo de ver esse macaco treinado, é natural para um menino saudável da idade dele. Só porque quer ver o Ajax não significa que quer se casar com uma macaca. E mesmo que quisesse, você não teria o direito de gritar 'que vergonha!'" John Clayton, Lord Greystoke, colocou o braço ao redor da esposa e riu gentilmente para o rosto dela antes de beijá-la. Depois ficou mais sério e continuou: "Você nunca contou a Jack sobre minha vida antiga, e não me deixou contar também. Acho que isso foi um erro. Se eu pudesse ter contado a ele sobre Tarzan dos Macacos, poderia ter tirado boa parte da magia e do romantismo que as pessoas imaginam sobre a vida na selva quando não sabem nada sobre ela. Então ele poderia ter aprendido com minha experiência. Mas agora, se a selva um dia o chamar, ele só terá seus próprios sentimentos para guiá-lo. Sei quão fortes esses sentimentos podem ser na direção errada."

En Mas Lady Greystoke só balançou a cabeça, como já tinha feito muitas vezes antes quando esse assunto surgia.

En "Não, John", disse ela com firmeza. "Nunca vou concordar em colocar qualquer ideia de vida selvagem na cabeça de Jack. Nós dois queremos protegê-lo disso."

En Foi à noite que voltaram a falar sobre isso, e dessa vez foi Jack quem trouxe o assunto. Estava sentado numa poltrona grande, lendo, quando de repente ergueu os olhos e falou com o pai.

En "Por que", perguntou direto ao ponto, "eu não posso ir ver o Ajax?"

En "Sua mãe não aprova", respondeu o pai.

En "E o senhor?"

En "Essa não é a questão", respondeu Lord Greystoke, evitando o assunto. "Basta que sua mãe se oponha."

En Depois de alguns momentos de silêncio pensativo, o menino disse: "Vou vê-lo. Não sou diferente do Willie Grimsby ou de qualquer outro menino que foi vê-lo. Não fez mal a eles, e não vai me fazer mal. Eu poderia ir sem contar, mas não vou fazer isso. Então estou dizendo agora que vou ver o Ajax."

En O menino não parecia rude ou rebelde. Estava apenas expondo os fatos. O pai mal conseguiu esconder um sorriso, ou sua admiração pelo jeito corajoso do filho agir.

En "Admiro sua honestidade, Jack", disse ele. "Vou ser honesto também. Se você for ver o Ajax sem permissão, vou te castigar. Nunca usei castigo físico com você, mas aviso que se desobedecer aos desejos de sua mãe agora, eu vou fazer isso."

En "Sim, senhor", respondeu o menino. Depois acrescentou: "Vou te contar, senhor, quando tiver ido ver o Ajax."

En O quarto do senhor Moore ficava ao lado do quarto do menino, e era hábito dele checar o menino toda noite antes de dormir. Naquela noite, ele foi especialmente cuidadoso, porque tinha acabado de conversar com o pai e a mãe do menino. Eles tinham pedido que ele garantisse que Jack não fosse ao music hall onde o Ajax era exibido. Então, quando abriu a porta do quarto do menino por volta de nove e

meia, ficou alarmado, embora não totalmente surpreso, ao encontrar o futuro Lord Greystoke completamente vestido e prestes a sair pela janela aberta do quarto.

En O senhor Moore atravessou o quarto rapidamente, mas não foi preciso. Quando o menino o ouviu e percebeu que tinha sido pego, se virou como se estivesse desistindo do plano.

En "Aonde você ia?", perguntou o senhor Moore, agitado, sem fôlego.

En "Vou ver o Ajax", respondeu o menino, calmamente.

En "Estou espantado", gritou o senhor Moore. Mas um momento depois ficou ainda mais chocado. O menino se aproximou, o segurou pela cintura, o ergueu do chão e o jogou de cara na cama, empurrando seu rosto num travesseiro macio.

En "Fica quieto", avisou o vencedor. "Ou eu te sufoco."

En O senhor Moore lutou, mas não adiantou nada. O que quer que Tarzan dos Macacos tenha passado para o filho, também deu a ele um corpo forte. O tutor estava indefeso nas mãos do menino. Jack se ajoelhou sobre ele, rasgou tiras de um lençol e amarrou as mãos do senhor Moore atrás das costas. Depois o virou, colocou uma mordaca na boca dele e a amarrou com outra tira ao redor da cabeça. O tempo todo, falava numa voz calma e baixa.

En "Sou Waja, chefe dos Waji", disse ele, "e você é Mohammed Dubn, o xequê árabe que quer matar meu povo e roubar meu marfim." Depois amarrou rapidamente os tornozelos do senhor Moore atrás dos pulsos. "Ah-rá! Vilão! Finalmente te tenho em meu poder. Vou embora agora, mas vou voltar!" O filho de Tarzan então atravessou o quarto, passou pela janela aberta e desceu pelo cano de descida até a liberdade.

En O senhor Moore se contorceu e se debateu na cama. Tinha certeza de que sufocaria se a ajuda não viesse logo. No pânico, rolou para fora da cama. A dor da queda o ajudou a pensar com mais clareza. Já não estava assustado demais para raciocinar. Ficou parado tentando achar uma saída. Então lembrou que o quarto embaixo era onde Lord e Lady Greystoke estavam sentados quando ele os deixou. Achou que talvez já tivessem saído, mas a única coisa que podia fazer era tentar chamar a atenção de alguém lá embaixo. Depois de muitas tentativas

falhas, conseguiu bater a ponta da bota no chão. Continuou fazendo isso por um bom tempo. Por fim ouviu passos na escada e depois uma batida na porta. O senhor Moore bateu com força com a ponta do pé, já que não podia responder de outro jeito. A batida veio de novo depois de uma pausa. Ele bateu outra vez. Será que nunca abririam a porta? Rolou devagar em direção à ajuda. Se conseguisse chegar até a porta e apoiar as costas nela, poderia bater na base e certamente seria ouvido. A batida veio de novo, um pouco mais alta, e depois uma voz disse: "Senhor Jack!"

En Era um dos criados da casa, e o senhor Moore conhecia a voz. Quase estourou um vaso sanguíneo tentando gritar "entre" através da mordação. Depois de um momento, o homem bateu de novo, mais alto dessa vez, e chamou o nome do menino outra vez. Como ninguém respondeu, ele girou a maçaneta. Nesse mesmo instante, o senhor Moore de repente se lembrou de algo que o encheu de terror novamente: ele mesmo tinha trancado a porta quando entrou no quarto.

En Ele ouviu o criado tentar a porta várias vezes e depois ir embora. Depois disso, o senhor Moore desmaiou.

En Enquanto isso, Jack estava curtindo muito o music hall. Tinha chegado bem na hora em que o número do Ajax estava começando. Comprou um lugar num camarote e se inclinava sobre a grade, olhando o macaco enorme com olhos arregalados. O treinador notou o rosto bonito e ansioso do menino. Um dos truques do Ajax era entrar em um ou mais camarotes durante o número, como se procurasse um parente perdido, como o treinador explicava. O homem viu que mandar o Ajax até o camarote com esse menino bonito provavelmente o assustaria, porque a fera grande e peluda era muito forte e estava perto demais.

En Então, na hora do macaco voltar de trás do palco em resposta aos aplausos, o treinador apontou o Ajax para o camarote onde o menino estava sentado sozinho. O macaco enorme pulou do palco para o lado do menino. Mas se o treinador esperava medo e risadas, estava errado. Um sorriso largo apareceu no rosto do menino, e ele colocou a mão no braço peludo do macaco. O Ajax segurou o menino pelos dois ombros e olhou de perto no rosto dele, enquanto o menino acariciava sua cabeça e falava baixinho com ele.

En O Ajax nunca tinha gastado tanto tempo examinando alguém antes. Parecia perturbado e muito animado. Tagarelava e murmurava para o menino, e o treinador nunca o tinha visto mostrar tanta gentileza com um ser humano. Logo o macaco subiu para dentro do camarote e se aconchegou perto do menino. A plateia ficou encantada. Ficaram ainda mais felizes quando o tempo do treinador acabou e ele tentou fazer o Ajax sair do camarote. O macaco não se mexeu. O gerente ficou irritado com o atraso e mandou o treinador se apressar. Mas quando o treinador entrou no camarote para puxar o Ajax relutante, foi recebido com dentes afiados à mostra e rosnados ameaçadores.

En A plateia estava cheia de alegria. Aplaudiram o macaco. Aplaudiram o menino. Também gritaram e zombaram do treinador e do gerente, que sem querer se mostrou e tentou ajudar o treinador.

En Por fim, o treinador ficou desesperado. Viu que se a rebelião do macaco não fosse parada logo, o animal poderia ficar inútil para exposições futuras. Correu ao camarim e pegou um chicote pesado. Voltou ao camarote, mas quando ameaçou o Ajax com ele, encontrou dois inimigos furiosos em vez de um. O menino tinha se levantado e pegado uma cadeira. Ficou de pé ao lado do macaco, pronto para defender seu novo amigo. O sorriso tinha sumido do rosto bonito. Seus olhos cinzentos fizeram o treinador parar e pensar. Ao seu lado estava o macaco gigante, rosnando e pronto.

En Ninguém pode saber exatamente o que teria acontecido se a ajuda não tivesse chegado a tempo. Mas o treinador provavelmente teria sido atacado com força, no mínimo, pelo jeito como os dois o encararam.

En Um homem de rosto pálido correu para a biblioteca dos Greystoke para dizer que tinha encontrado a porta de Jack trancada. Tinha batido e chamado muitas vezes, mas não houve resposta. Em vez disso, ouviu uma batida estranha e o som de algo se movendo no chão, como se fosse um corpo.

En John Clayton subiu a escada de quatro em quatro degraus. Sua esposa e o criado o seguiram depressa. Chamou o nome do filho bem alto, mas não teve resposta. Então jogou todo o seu peso, e toda a força de seus músculos poderosos, contra a porta pesada. As dobradiças de ferro estalaram e a madeira quebrou, e a porta arrebentou.

En No pé da porta estava o corpo inconsciente do senhor Moore, e a porta caiu sobre ele com um barulho alto. Tarzan pulou pela abertura, e um momento depois o quarto ficou iluminado por uma dúzia de lâmpadas elétricas.

En Levaram vários minutos para encontrar o tutor, porque a porta o cobria quase completamente. Por fim o tiraram, cortaram a mordaça e as cordas, e deram bastante água fria. Isso ajudou ele a recobrar a consciência.

En "Onde está o Jack?", foi a primeira pergunta de John Clayton. Depois perguntou: "Quem fez isso?" Estava pensando em Rokoff e temendo que Jack tivesse sido levado de novo.

En Devagar, o senhor Moore se levantou. Olhou ao redor do quarto. Aos poucos, reuniu seus pensamentos. Então os detalhes de sua experiência terrível voltaram para ele.

En Suas primeiras palavras foram: "Peço demissão, senhor, a partir de agora. O senhor não precisa de um tutor para seu filho. Precisa de um domador de animais selvagens."

En "Mas onde ele está?", gritou Lady Greystoke.

En "Foi ver o Ajax."

En Tarzan mal conseguiu se segurar para não sorrir. Viu que o tutor estava mais assustado do que machucado. Depois mandou trazer seu carro fechado e partiu para um conhecido music hall.

3 - Capítulo 3

En O treinador ergueu o chicote e hesitou por um momento na porta do camarote, onde o menino e o macaco o encaravam. Então um homem alto e de ombros largos passou por ele e entrou. Quando o menino viu o recém-chegado, um leve rubor subiu às suas bochechas.

En "Papai!", gritou.

En O macaco olhou uma vez para o lorde inglês, depois pulou em sua direção, chamando com sons agitados. O homem arregalou os olhos de surpresa e ficou parado, como se tivesse virado pedra.

En "Akut!", gritou.

En O menino olhou confuso do macaco para o pai, e do pai para o macaco. O treinador ficou chocado ao ouvir o que veio a seguir. Do inglês saíram sons de macaco, e o macaco enorme que o segurava respondeu do mesmo jeito.

En Nos bastidores, um velho horivelmente curvado e feio observava a cena no camarote. Seu rosto marcado de varíola mudava rápido de uma expressão para outra, do prazer ao medo.

En "Faz muito tempo que procuro por você, Tarzan", disse Akut. "Agora que te achei, vou para sua selva e vou viver lá para sempre."

En O homem acariciou a cabeça da fera. Pela mente dele passou rápido uma sequência de lembranças que o levaram fundo na floresta africana primitiva, onde essa fera enorme, parecida com um homem, tinha lutado ombro a ombro com ele anos antes. Viu o negro Mugambi balançando sua maça mortal, e ao lado deles, com presas à mostra e bigodes eriçados, Sheeta, o terrível. Bem perto do selvagem e da pantera selvagem vinham os macacos horrendos de Akut. O homem suspirou. O desejo pela selva que achava morto se ergueu forte de novo nele. Ah, se ao menos pudesse voltar, mesmo que por um mês curto, sentir os galhos folhosos roçando sua pele nua, cheirar o mofo úmido da vegetação morta que é incenso e mirra para quem nasce na selva, sentir a chegada silenciosa dos grandes caçadores em seu rastro, caçar e ser caçado, matar! A imagem o atraía. E então veio outra imagem: uma mulher de rosto doce, ainda jovem e bonita; amigos; um lar; um filho. Ele encolheu os ombros gigantes.

En "Não pode ser, Akut", disse. "Mas se você quer voltar, vou garantir que isso aconteça. Você não poderia ser feliz aqui. Eu talvez não seja feliz lá."

En O treinador deu um passo à frente. O macaco mostrou os dentes e rosnou.

En "Vá com ele, Akut", disse Tarzan dos Macacos. "Vou vir te ver amanhã."

En A fera foi devagar e com raiva até o lado do treinador. A pedido de John Clayton, o treinador disse onde poderiam encontrá-lo. Tarzan se virou para o filho.

En "Venha!", disse, e os dois saíram do teatro. Depois de entrarem na limusine, nenhum dos dois falou por vários minutos. Por fim o menino quebrou o silêncio.

En "O macaco conhecia você", disse, "e vocês falaram um com o outro na língua dos macacos. Como ele te conhecia, e como você aprendeu a língua dele?"

En Então, pela primeira vez, Tarzan dos Macacos contou ao filho sobre sua vida inicial. Falou rapidamente sobre nascer na selva, perder os pais, e ser criado por Kala, a grande macaca. Também contou sobre os perigos da selva, os animais selvagens, secas longas, chuvas fortes, fome, frio, calor, medo e dor. Esperava que essas histórias fizessem o menino não gostar da selva. Mas eram exatamente essas coisas que Tarzan amava e lembrava melhor. Enquanto falava, esqueceu de uma coisa importante: o menino ao seu lado, ouvindo atentamente, era filho de Tarzan dos Macacos.

En Depois que o menino foi para a cama, sem nenhum castigo, John Clayton contou à esposa sobre a noite. Disse que finalmente tinha contado ao menino a verdade sobre sua vida na selva. Sua esposa já esperava há muito tempo que o filho um dia soubesse daqueles anos terríveis em que o pai tinha vivido na selva como uma fera selvagem. Ela só balançou a cabeça, ainda esperando que o forte desejo pela selva no pai não tivesse passado para o filho.

En Tarzan visitou Akut no dia seguinte, mas Jack não teve permissão para ir junto, mesmo implorando. Dessa vez Tarzan viu o velho dono do macaco, marcado de varíola, mas não o reconheceu como o esperto

Paulvitch de antes. Porque Akut pediu, Tarzan trouxe a ideia de comprar o macaco. Mas Paulvitch não quis dizer um preço. Disse que pensaria sobre isso.

En Quando Tarzan voltou para casa, Jack estava ansioso para ouvir sobre a visita. Por fim sugeriu que o pai comprasse o macaco e o trouxesse para casa. Lady Greystoke ficou chocada com a ideia, mas o menino não desistiu. Tarzan disse que queria comprar Akut e mandá-lo de volta para sua casa na selva, e a mãe concordou. Jack pediu para visitar o macaco, mas ela recusou de novo. Ele tinha o endereço que o treinador dera ao pai, e dois dias depois escapou de seu novo tutor, que tinha tomado o lugar do senhor Moore. Depois de uma longa busca numa parte de Londres que nunca tinha visto, encontrou os cômodos sujos e pequenos do velho de rosto marcado de varíola. O homem atendeu à porta ele mesmo. Quando Jack disse que tinha vindo ver o Ajax, ele abriu a porta e o deixou entrar no quartinho que dividia com o grande macaco. No passado, Paulvitch tinha sido um homem mau e cuidadoso, mas dez anos de vida terrível entre canibais na África tinham tirado dele qualquer vestígio de limpeza. Suas roupas estavam amassadas e sujas. Suas mãos estavam por lavar, e os poucos fios finos de cabelo não estavam penteados. Seu quarto era uma bagunça de imundície. Quando o menino entrou, viu o grande macaco agachado na cama, onde os cobertores estavam emaranhados e cheiravam mal. Quando o macaco viu o menino, pulou para o chão e foi até ele. O homem não conhecia Jack e temeu que o macaco quisesse fazer mal, então se colocou entre eles e mandou o macaco voltar para a cama.

En "Ele não vai me machucar", gritou o menino. "Somos amigos, e antes ele era amigo do meu pai. Eles se conheceram na selva. Meu pai é Lord Greystoke. Ele não sabe que vim aqui. Minha mãe me proibiu de vir, mas eu queria ver o Ajax, e vou pagar ao senhor se me deixar vir sempre vê-lo."

En Quando Paulvitch ouviu quem era o menino, seus olhos se estreitaram. Desde que tinha visto Tarzan de novo no teatro, um desejo de vingança começara a crescer em sua mente. Pessoas fracas e criminosas costumam culpar os outros por seus próprios problemas. Então agora, Alexis Paulvitch se lembrava do seu passado. Achava que todas as coisas ruins que aconteceram com ele eram culpa de Tarzan.

Ele e Rokoff tinham tentado arruinar e matar Tarzan, mas os planos falharam.

En No começo, ele não via um jeito seguro de machucar Tarzan através do filho de Tarzan. Mas via que o menino podia ser útil para a vingança, então decidiu ser gentil com ele e esperar uma chance mais tarde. Contou ao menino tudo que sabia sobre a vida do pai na selva. Depois soube que o menino tinha sido mantido longe dessas histórias por muitos anos e proibido de visitar o jardim zoológico. Também soube que o menino tinha amarrado e amordaçado o tutor para escapar e ir ao music hall ver o Ajax. Então adivinhou o grande medo dos pais: que o menino pudesse desejar a selva, assim como o pai tinha desejado.

En Então Paulvitch incentivou o menino a visitá-lo com frequência. Sempre alimentava a fome do menino por histórias sobre o mundo selvagem que conhecia tão bem. Também o deixava muito sozinho com o Akut, e logo ficou surpreso ao saber que o menino conseguia fazer a grande fera entendê-lo. O menino realmente tinha aprendido muitas palavras da língua simples do povo macaco.

En Durante esse tempo Tarzan visitou Paulvitch várias vezes. Parecia ansioso para comprar o Ajax. Por fim disse abertamente ao homem que queria mandar a fera de volta para a liberdade em sua casa na selva. Também disse que sua esposa temia que o filho descobrisse onde o macaco estava e, por amar a fera, desenvolvesse o espírito errante que tinha moldado a própria vida de Tarzan.

En O russo quase sorriu ouvindo Lord Greystoke. Só meia hora antes, o futuro Lord Greystoke estava sentado na cama bagunçada, conversando com o Ajax com tanta facilidade quanto se fosse um macaco de nascença.

En Durante essa conversa, Paulvitch teve uma ideia. Concordeu em aceitar uma soma enorme pelo macaco e entregá-lo dois dias depois a um navio que partia de Dover para a África. Tinha dois motivos para concordar. Primeiro, o dinheiro era muito importante para ele, porque o macaco não lhe rendia mais nada. O Ajax tinha parado de se apresentar no palco depois de encontrar Tarzan. Era como se a fera tivesse sido trazida da selva e mostrada a milhares de pessoas só para encontrar seu velho amigo e mestre. Depois disso, parecia achar que não havia mais motivo para se misturar com seres humanos. Nenhuma persuasão

conseguia fazê-lo subir no palco de novo, e quando o treinador uma vez tentou a força, teve sorte de escapar vivo. Jack Clayton o salvou. Jack tinha permissão para visitar o animal no camarim do music hall, e interveio na hora ao ver que a fera selvagem representava perigo real.

En Além do dinheiro, o russo também queria vingança. Tinha ficado mais amargo pensando nos fracassos e misérias de sua vida, e culpava Tarzan por eles. A perda mais recente, e não a menor, era a recusa do Ajax em continuar rendendo dinheiro para ele. Culpava Tarzan diretamente por essa recusa e por fim se convenceu de que o homem-macaco tinha dito ao grande macaco para não subir no palco.

En Paulvitch era naturalmente cruel, e a tortura e a fome tinham deixado sua mente e corpo mais fracos e retorcidos. Tinha mudado de um homem mau frio, esperto e muito inteligente para uma ameaça perigosa com a mente confusa de uma pessoa quebrada. Mesmo assim, seu plano ainda era esperto o bastante para fazer as pessoas duvidarem se ele estava realmente louco. Primeiro, garantiria que ele recebesse o pagamento que Lord Greystoke tinha prometido por levar o macaco embora. Depois lhe daria vingança através do filho que ele tanto amava. Essa parte do plano era grosseira e brutal. Não tinha a crueldade cuidadosa dos velhos tempos, quando ele trabalhava com Nikolas Rokoff. Mas manteria Paulvitch livre de culpa, porque a culpa pareceria ser do macaco, que também seria punido por se recusar a sustentar mais o russo.

En Tudo parecia trabalhar a favor de Paulvitch. Por acaso, o filho de Tarzan ouviu o pai contar à mãe do menino como planejava mandar o Akut de volta em segurança para sua casa na selva. Depois de ouvir isso, Jack implorou para trazerem o macaco para casa para que pudesse tê-lo como companheiro de brincadeiras. Tarzan não se importaria, mas Lady Greystoke ficou chocada com a ideia. Jack implorou à mãe, mas não adiantou nada. Ela não mudou de ideia. No fim, Jack pareceu aceitar a decisão dela de que o macaco devia ser mandado de volta para a África e o menino devia voltar para a escola depois das férias.

En Ele não tentou visitar o quarto de Paulvitch de novo naquele dia. Em vez disso, se manteve ocupado de outras formas. Sempre recebeu bastante dinheiro, então quando precisou, não teve dificuldade em juntar várias centenas de libras. Gastou parte disso em coisas estranhas, que trouxe escondido para casa quando voltou tarde da tarde.

En Na manhã seguinte, depois de dar tempo para o pai sair na frente e terminar seus negócios com Paulvitch, o menino se apressou até o quarto do russo. Não sabia a verdadeira natureza do homem, então não ousou contar tudo. Temia que o velho não só se recusasse a ajudar, mas contasse ao pai. Em vez disso, simplesmente pediu permissão para levar o Ajax até Dover. Disse que isso pouparia ao velho uma viagem cansativa e também colocaria várias libras no bolso dele, porque o menino pretendia pagar bem ao russo.

En "Veja", continuou, "não vai haver perigo de descobrirem, porque supostamente eu vou pegar um trem à tarde para a escola. Em vez disso, vou vir aqui depois que me virem entrar no trem. Aí posso levar o Ajax até Dover e chegar à escola só um dia atrasado. Ninguém vai saber, nada de ruim vai acontecer, e eu vou ter um dia extra com o Ajax antes de perdê-lo para sempre."

En O plano se encaixava perfeitamente com o que Paulvitch tinha em mente. Se soubesse o que o menino estava planejando a seguir, provavelmente teria desistido do próprio plano de vingança e ajudado o menino de todo coração. Isso teria sido melhor para Paulvitch, se ao menos ele pudesse ver o futuro algumas horas à frente.

En Naquela tarde, Lord e Lady Greystoke se despediram do filho e o viram sentado em segurança num vagão de primeira classe que o levaria à escola em algumas horas. Mas assim que o deixaram, ele pegou as malas, saiu do compartimento e foi até um ponto de táxi fora da estação. Ali contratou um táxi para levá-lo ao endereço do russo. Já era crepúsculo quando chegou. Paulvitch o esperava. O homem andava nervoso de um lado para outro. O macaco estava amarrado à cama com uma corda forte. Jack nunca tinha visto o Ajax preso assim antes. Olhou para Paulvitch com uma expressão de dúvida. O homem gaguejou que achava que o animal sabia que seria mandado embora e temia que o Ajax tentasse escapar.

En Paulvitch segurava outro pedaço de corda na mão. Tinha um laço numa ponta, e ele ficava mexendo nela. Andava de um lado para outro no quarto. Seu rosto marcado de varíola se mexia estranhamente enquanto falava sozinho em silêncio. O menino nunca o tinha visto assim, e isso o deixou desconfortável. Por fim Paulvitch parou do outro lado do quarto, longe do macaco.

En "Venha aqui", disse ao menino. "Vou te mostrar como amarrar o macaco se ele mostrar sinais de rebeldia durante a viagem."

En O menino riu. "Não vai ser necessário", disse. "O Ajax vai fazer tudo que eu mandar."

En O velho bateu o pé com raiva. "Venha aqui, como estou mandando", repetiu. "Se não me obedecer, não vai junto com o macaco para Dover. Não vou correr o risco de ele escapar."

En Ainda sorrindo, o menino atravessou o quarto e ficou de pé na frente do russo.

En "Vire-se, de costas para mim", disse o outro homem. "Aí posso te mostrar como amarrá-lo rápido."

En O menino obedeceu e colocou as mãos atrás das costas quando Paulvitch mandou. Na hora o velho passou um laço num pulso, deu duas voltas no outro pulso e amarrou a corda.

En Assim que o menino ficou amarrado, o comportamento do homem mudou. Xingou com raiva, virou o prisioneiro, o derrubou e o jogou com força no chão. Pulou no peito do menino quando ele caiu. Da cama, o macaco rosnou e lutou contra as cordas. O menino não gritou, porque tinha aprendido com seu pai selvagem que ninguém viria ajudar quem tinha caído.

En Os dedos de Paulvitch foram até a garganta do menino. Ele olhou para a vítima com um sorriso horrível.

En "Seu pai me arruinou", murmurou. "Isto vai pagar por isso. Ele vai achar que foi o macaco. Vou dizer que foi o macaco. Que o deixei sozinho por alguns minutos, e você entrou escondido, e o macaco te matou. Depois de te sufocar até a morte, vou jogar seu corpo na cama. Quando eu trazer seu pai aqui, ele vai ver o macaco sentado em cima", e o vilão retorcido riu de prazer. Seus dedos se fecharam na garganta do menino.

En Atrás deles, a fera furiosa rosnava tão alto que o som ecoava pelo quartinho. O menino ficou pálido, mas não mostrou mais nenhum sinal de medo. Era o filho de Tarzan. Os dedos apertaram sua garganta, e ele mal conseguia respirar. O macaco se jogou contra a corda forte que o prendia. Depois se virou, enrolou a corda nas mãos como um homem

faria, e puxou com força para trás. Seus músculos grandes se destacaram sob a pele peluda. Houve um som como madeira quebrando. A corda aguentou, mas parte da tábua do pé da cama se soltou.

En Ao som, Paulvitch ergueu os olhos. Seu rosto feio ficou branco de medo. O macaco estava solto.

En Com um salto, a criatura estava sobre ele. O homem gritou. A fera o arrastou para longe do corpo do menino. Dedos enormes afundaram na carne do homem. Dentes amarelos se abriram perto da garganta dele. Ele lutou, mas foi inútil. Quando os dentes se fecharam, a alma de Alexis Paulvitch se foi.

En O menino se levantou com a ajuda do Akut. Por duas horas, sob a direção do menino, o macaco trabalhou nos nós que prendiam os pulsos do amigo. Por fim os nós se soltaram, e o menino ficou livre. Depois abriu uma das malas e tirou algumas roupas. Tinha planejado com cuidado. Não pediu conselho à fera, mas o macaco fez tudo que ele mandou. Juntos escaparam da casa, e uma pessoa comum não teria notado que um deles era um macaco.

4 - Capítulo 4

En A morte do velho russo solitário, Michael Sabrov, pelo seu macaco treinado saiu nos jornais por alguns dias. Lord Greystoke leu sobre isso e tomou cuidado para não deixar seu nome ligado ao caso. Também se manteve informado sobre a busca policial pelo macaco.

En Como a maioria das pessoas, seu principal interesse era o desaparecimento misterioso do assassino. Mas depois, poucos dias depois, soube que seu filho Jack não tinha chegado à escola. Tinham o visto entrar no trem em segurança. O pai não achou que o desaparecimento do filho estivesse ligado ao macaco. Um mês depois, uma investigação cuidadosa mostrou que Jack tinha saído do trem antes de ele partir de Londres. Um taxista o tinha levado até o endereço do velho russo. Então Tarzan dos Macacos percebeu que o Akut estava ligado ao desaparecimento do menino.

En Depois que o taxista deixou o menino na calçada em frente à casa onde o russo morava, não havia mais nenhuma pista. Ninguém tinha visto o menino ou o macaco depois disso, pelo menos ninguém que ainda estivesse vivo. O dono da casa reconheceu a foto do menino como alguém que visitava com frequência o quarto do velho. Não sabia mais nada. Então os investigadores chegaram a um beco sem saída na porta de um prédio velho e sujo numa parte pobre de Londres.

En No dia depois da morte de Alexis Paulvitch, um jovem viajando com a avó doente embarcou num vapor em Dover. A velha usava um véu grosso, e por causa da idade e da doença, teve que ser carregada a bordo numa cadeira de rodas.

En O menino não deixava ninguém além dele empurrar a cadeira dela. Também a ajudou a sair da cadeira e entrar na cabine com as próprias mãos. Depois disso, ninguém do navio viu a velha senhora de novo até desembarcarem. O menino até disse que faria o trabalho do camareiro, porque, explicou, sua avó tinha um temperamento nervoso e odiava ter estranhos por perto.

En Fora da cabine, e ninguém a bordo sabia o que ele fazia dentro dela, o menino era como qualquer outro menino inglês saudável. Se misturava com os outros passageiros e se tornou favorito dos oficiais. Também fez muitos amigos entre os marinheiros. Era generoso e

tranquilo, mas também tinha um caráter orgulhoso e forte que fazia as pessoas admirá-lo e gostar dele.

En Um americano chamado Condon estava no navio. Era um criminoso conhecido, procurado em várias cidades dos Estados Unidos. Não notou o menino até vê-lo mostrar acidentalmente um maço de dinheiro. Depois disso, Condon ficou amigo do menino. Soube que o menino viajava com a avó doente. O destino deles era um pequeno porto na costa oeste da África, perto do equador. O sobrenome deles era Billings, e não tinham amigos lá. Quando Condon perguntou o motivo da viagem, o menino não quis dizer. Condon não insistiu mais. Já sabia o suficiente.

En Várias vezes Condon tentou fazer o menino entrar num jogo de cartas. Mas o menino não se interessou, e os olhares de raiva de alguns outros homens fizeram Condon decidir encontrar outro jeito de conseguir o dinheiro do menino.

En Por fim chegou o dia em que o vapor ancorou perto de um promontório arborizado. Ali, umas vinte cabanas de chapa de ferro formavam uma marca feia na terra e mostravam que a civilização tinha chegado. Ao redor ficavam as cabanas de palha do povo nativo. Pareciam selvagens e antigas, e combinavam com a selva tropical atrás delas. Ao mesmo tempo, faziam a feiura pobre dos primeiros prédios dos colonos brancos parecer ainda pior.

En O menino se debruçou na amurada e olhou bem além da cidade feita pelo homem, para dentro da selva feita por Deus. Um pequeno arrepio de emoção percorreu suas costas. Depois, sem querer, pareceu ver os olhos carinhosos da mãe e o rosto forte do pai, que também mostrava amor. Sentiu sua determinação começar a enfraquecer. Perto dali, um dos oficiais do navio gritava ordens a um grupo de barcos nativos que se aproximavam para carregar a carga do vapor para aquele pequeno posto.

En "Quando o próximo navio para a Inglaterra passa por aqui?", perguntou o menino.

En "O Emanuel deve chegar logo", respondeu o oficial. "Achei que o encontraríamos aqui", e continuou gritando suas observações para a multidão empoeirada que se aproximava do navio.

En Descer a avó do menino até uma canoa que esperava foi difícil. O menino ficou bem ao lado dela o tempo todo. Por fim ela ficou em segurança na canoa, e ele desceu atrás dela como um gato. Estava tão ocupado ajudando-a que não notou um pacotinho escorregando do bolso. Caiu no mar.

En Logo depois que o barco com o menino e a velha saiu em direção à praia, Condon chamou uma canoa do outro lado do navio. Depois de negociar com o dono, colocou suas malas e ele mesmo nela. Quando chegou à terra, ficou fora da vista do lugar feio de dois andares marcado "Hotel". Só entrou para providenciar um quarto quando já estava bem escuro.

En Num quarto dos fundos no segundo andar, o menino tentava explicar à avó que tinha decidido voltar para a Inglaterra no próximo navio. Disse a ela que podia ficar na África se quisesse, mas ele sentia que devia voltar para o pai e a mãe. Achava que eles estavam sofrendo por causa da sua ausência. Isso mostra que os pais dele não sabiam do plano de aventura feito por ele e pela velha.

En Depois de tomar a decisão, o menino sentiu alívio da preocupação que o incomodava havia muitas noites sem dormir. Quando adormeceu, sonhou com um encontro feliz com a família em casa. Mas enquanto dormia, o Destino veio devagar pelo corredor escuro do prédio sujo. O Destino veio na forma do ladrão americano, Condon.

En Com cuidado, o homem se aproximou da porta do menino. Esperou e escutou até a respiração regular lá dentro dizer que os dois dormiam. Depois colocou uma chave fina na fechadura. Girou a chave e a maçaneta juntas, e empurrou a porta. Entrou e fechou a porta atrás dele. Nuvens escuras cobriam a lua, então o quarto estava bem escuro. Condon foi em direção à cama. No canto distante, algo se moveu em silêncio. Mas Condon não ouviu nada. Estava olhando só para a cama, onde esperava encontrar um menino e sua avó doente e indefesa.

En O americano só queria o maço de dinheiro. Se conseguisse pegar sem ser visto, ótimo. Se alguém revidasse, ele também estava pronto para isso. As roupas do menino estavam numa cadeira ao lado da cama. Condon as revistou rápido, mas não encontrou o maço de notas novas. Devia estar embaixo do travesseiro. Se aproximou mais e colocou a mão embaixo do travesseiro. Nesse instante a nuvem se afastou e o luar

encheu o quarto. No mesmo momento o menino abriu os olhos e olhou direto para Condon. Condon viu na hora que o menino estava sozinho na cama. Foi até a garganta do menino. Mas quando o menino se levantou, Condon ouviu um rosnado baixo atrás dele. Depois o menino segurou seus pulsos, e Condon sentiu a força naquelas mãos brancas e finas.

En Então sentiu outras mãos na garganta, mãos ásperas e peludas alcançando por cima de seus ombros por trás. Olhou para trás apavorado e viu um macaco enorme, parecido com um homem, segurando-o por trás. Os dentes à mostra do macaco estavam perto da garganta dele. O menino segurava seus pulsos para que não pudesse se mexer. Ninguém fez nenhum som. Condon olhou ao redor do quarto e de repente entendeu a verdade terrível. Em que criaturas estranhas tinha se colocado nas mãos? Lutou desesperadamente para se livrar do menino e se virar contra a criatura atrás dele. Solto uma mão e bateu com força no rosto do menino. Isso pareceu liberar uma fúria selvagem na criatura peluda em sua garganta. Condon ouviu um rosnado baixo e selvagem. Foi a última coisa que ele ouviu na vida. Depois foi puxado para trás no chão. Um corpo pesado caiu sobre ele, dentes fortes se afundaram em sua garganta, e tudo ficou escuro. Um momento depois o macaco se levantou do corpo dele, mas Condon não soube disso. Estava morto.

En O menino, chocado, pulou da cama e se debruçou sobre o corpo do homem. Sabia que o Akut tinha matado para protegê-lo, assim como matara Michael Sabrov. Mas agora estavam na África selvagem, longe de casa e amigos. O que as pessoas fariam com o Akut e com ele? O menino sabia que assassinato podia trazer a pena de morte. Também sabia que um cúmplice podia ser punido também. Quem falaria por eles? Todos estariam contra eles. Era um lugar meio selvagem, meio civilizado. Achou que arrastariam o Akut e ele para fora pela manhã e os enforcariam na árvore mais próxima. Tinha lido sobre coisas assim na América. A África parecia ainda pior e mais selvagem que o oeste americano. Sim, os dois seriam enforcados pela manhã!

En Não havia como escapar? Pensou por um momento em silêncio. Depois sentiu alívio. Bateu palmas e olhou para suas roupas na cadeira. Dinheiro podia resolver tudo. Podia salvá-lo e ao Akut. Procurou o maço de dinheiro no bolso, mas tinha sumido. Revistou os outros bolsos, primeiro devagar e depois em pânico. Caiu de joelhos e mãos e olhou pelo chão. Acendeu a lâmpada, moveu a cama para o lado, e apalpou

cada centímetro do chão. Parou ao lado do corpo de Condon, depois se forçou a tocá-lo. Virou o corpo e procurou embaixo dele pelo dinheiro. Também não estava ali. Achou que Condon tinha entrado no quarto para roubar, mas não acreditava que o homem tivesse tido tempo de pegar o dinheiro. Mesmo assim, não estava em nenhum outro lugar, então devia estar no corpo do morto. De novo e de novo revistou o quarto e voltou ao cadáver, mas não conseguiu achar o dinheiro.

En Estava quase louco de desespero. O que podiam fazer? Pela manhã seriam encontrados e mortos. Mesmo com seu corpo grande e força, ainda era só um menininho, um menino assustado que sentia falta de casa e raciocinava mal porque sabia pouco sobre a vida. Um fato terrível preenchia sua mente: tinham matado um homem, e estavam entre estranhos selvagens que teriam sede do sangue da primeira vítima que o destino lhes desse. Foi isso que aprendeu com histórias baratas de aventura.

En E precisavam de dinheiro!

En De novo foi até o corpo, dessa vez com coragem. O macaco sentou num canto e observou o jovem. Ele começou a tirar as roupas do americano peça por peça, e revistou cada uma com cuidado. Até revistou os sapatos com muito cuidado. Quando terminou e não achou nada, deitou na cama com olhos arregalados. Não via nada ao redor, só uma imagem escura do futuro, onde dois corpos pendiam em silêncio do galho de uma grande árvore.

En Não sabia quanto tempo ficou sentado ali. Por fim, um barulho do andar de baixo o fez pular. Rápido apagou a lâmpada, atravessou o chão em silêncio, e trancou a porta. Depois se virou para o macaco, com a mente decidida.

En Só na noite anterior, ele estava pronto para voltar para casa na primeira chance e pedir aos pais que perdoassem essa aventura louca. Agora sabia que talvez nunca mais os visse. Sentia o sangue de um homem em suas mãos. Em seus pensamentos perturbados, já não culpava o macaco pela morte de Condon. O pânico o tinha feito acreditar que ele mesmo era culpado. Se tivesse dinheiro, talvez pudesse comprar justiça. Mas sem um tostão, que esperança poderiam ter estrangeiros ali?

En Mas o que tinha acontecido com o dinheiro? Tentou lembrar quando o tinha visto pela última vez. Não conseguiu lembrar. E mesmo que conseguisse, não saberia como ele tinha sumido. Não notou quando o pacotinho caiu do bolso no mar. Isso aconteceu quando ele desceu pelo costado do navio até a canoa que o levou à praia.

En Então se virou para o Akut. "Venha!", disse na língua dos grandes macacos.

En Esquecendo que estava vestindo só um pijama fino, foi até a janela aberta. Colocou a cabeça para fora e escutou com cuidado. Uma única árvore ficava a poucos metros da janela. O menino pulou para o tronco e se segurou como um gato por um momento antes de descer em silêncio até o chão. O grande macaco o seguiu de perto. A duzentas jardas, a selva chegava perto da pequena cidade. O menino foi na frente para lá. Ninguém os viu. Um momento depois, a selva os escondeu, e John Clayton, o futuro Lord Greystoke, desapareceu da vista e do conhecimento dos homens.

En Era tarde na manhã seguinte quando um criado nativo bateu na porta do quarto dado à senhora Billings e seu neto. Sem resposta, tentou a chave-mestra, mas encontrou outra chave já na fechadura, do lado de dentro. Contou a Herr Skopf, o dono, que na hora subiu ao segundo andar e bateu com força na porta também. De novo não houve resposta. Se inclinou para olhar pelo buraco da fechadura, e por ser um homem pesado, perdeu o equilíbrio. Colocou a mão no chão para se firmar. Depois sentiu algo macio, grosso e molhado sob os dedos. Na luz fraca do corredor, olhou para a palma da mão e estremeceu ao ver uma mancha vermelho-escura na mão. Pulou e jogou o ombro contra a porta. Herr Skopf era um homem pesado então, ou pelo menos era. Não o vejo há vários anos. A porta fraca quebrou com o peso dele, e ele caiu depressa para dentro do quarto.

En Diante dele estava o maior mistério de sua vida. A seus pés estava o corpo morto de um homem estranho. Seu pescoço estava quebrado, e sua garganta cortada, como se por um animal selvagem. Estava completamente nu, e suas roupas espalhadas ao redor. A velha senhora e seu neto tinham sumido. A janela estava aberta. Deviam ter saído por ela, porque a porta tinha sido trancada por dentro.

En Mas como o menino poderia ter carregado a avó doente de uma janela do segundo andar até o chão? Era impossível. Herr Skopf revistou o quartinho de novo. Viu que a cama tinha sido movida bem longe da parede. Por quê? Olhou embaixo dela de novo pela terceira ou quarta vez. Os dois tinham sumido, mas ele sabia que a velha não poderia ter saído sem homens para carregá-la, assim como a tinham carregado no dia anterior.

En Mais buscas só aprofundaram o mistério. Todas as roupas dos dois ainda estavam no quarto, então se tinham partido, deviam ter partido nus ou de roupa de dormir. Herr Skopf balançou a cabeça, depois a coçou. Estava perplexo. Nunca tinha ouvido falar de Sherlock Holmes, ou não teria perdido tempo em chamar aquele famoso detetive, pois ali havia um verdadeiro mistério. Uma velha, uma inválida que teve que ser carregada do navio até o quarto, e seu neto bonito, tinham entrado num quarto do segundo andar de seu hotel no dia anterior. A refeição da noite deles tinha sido servida no quarto, e essa foi a última vez que alguém os viu. Às nove da manhã seguinte, o corpo de um estranho era a única coisa naquele quarto. Nenhum barco tinha saído do porto nesse meio tempo. Não havia estrada de ferro a centenas de milhas. Não havia outro povoado branco que os dois pudessem alcançar sem vários dias de marcha difícil com um safári bem equipado. Simplesmente tinham desaparecido no ar. O nativo que ele tinha mandado checar o chão embaixo da janela aberta tinha acabado de voltar dizendo que não havia sinal de pegada, e que tipo de criaturas poderiam ter caído daquela altura na grama macia sem deixar rastro? Herr Skopf estremeceu. Sim, era um grande mistério. Havia algo sobrenatural em tudo aquilo. Odiava pensar nisso, e temia a chegada da noite.

En Era um grande mistério para Herr Skopf, e provavelmente ainda é.

5 - Capítulo 5

En O capitão Armand Jacot, da Legião Estrangeira, estava sentado numa manta de sela aberta ao pé de uma pequena palmeira. Seus ombros largos e a cabeça de cabelo curto descansavam confortavelmente contra o tronco áspero. Suas pernas longas estavam esticadas à frente, e suas esporas enterradas no chão arenoso de um pequeno oásis do deserto. Ele descansava depois de um longo dia cavalgando pelas areias movediças do deserto.

En Fumava seu cigarro preguiçosamente e observava seu ordenança preparar a refeição da noite. O capitão Armand Jacot estava muito satisfeito consigo e com a vida. À sua direita, sua tropa de veteranos bronzeados estava ocupada e barulhenta. Estavam livres por um tempo da disciplina rígida e relaxavam os músculos cansados, rindo, brincando e fumando enquanto se preparavam para comer depois de doze horas sem comida. Entre eles sentavam-se cinco árabes de mantos brancos. Estavam calados, bem amarrados, e vigiados por guardas.

En Vê-los dava ao capitão Armand Jacot o sentimento feliz de um trabalho bem feito. Por um mês longo e quente, ele e sua pequena tropa tinham vasculhado o deserto atrás de um bando de saqueadores. Essa quadrilha era culpada de muitos camelos, cavalos e cabras roubados, e de assassinatos suficientes para mandá-los à guilhotina várias vezes.

En Uma semana antes, ele os tinha encontrado. Na batalha que se seguiu, perdeu dois de seus homens, mas os saqueadores foram quase destruídos. Talvez seis tenham escapado, mas o resto, exceto os cinco prisioneiros, foi morto pelas balas dos legionários. Melhor de tudo, o líder deles, Achmet ben Houdin, estava entre os prisioneiros.

En Deixando os prisioneiros, o capitão Jacot deixou a mente viajar pelas milhas restantes de areia até o pequeno posto militar onde veria a esposa e a filhinha no dia seguinte. Pensar neles sempre suavizava seus olhos. Já podia imaginar a beleza da mãe no rosto da pequena Jeanne, e os dois rostos sorririam para ele quando descesse do cavalo cansado no fim da tarde seguinte. Quase podia sentir as bochechas macias pressionadas contra a sua, como veludo contra couro.

En Seu devaneio foi interrompido pela voz de um guarda chamando um oficial subalterno. O capitão Jacot ergueu os olhos. O sol ainda não

tinha se posto, mas as sombras das poucas árvores ao redor do poço e de seus homens e cavalos se estendiam longe para o leste sobre a areia dourada. O guarda apontava naquela direção, e o cabo, olhos semicerrados, olhava para a distância. O capitão Jacot se levantou. Não era homem de se contentar em ver pelos olhos dos outros. Precisava ver com os próprios olhos. Normalmente via as coisas muito antes de os outros saberem que havia algo para ver, uma qualidade que lhe dera o apelido de Falcão. Agora viu, logo além das sombras longas, uma dúzia de pontinhos subindo e descendo entre as areias. Sumiam e reapareciam, mas sempre cresciam. Jacot os reconheceu na hora. Eram cavaleiros do deserto. Já um sargento corria em sua direção. Todo o acampamento olhava para a distância. Jacot deu algumas ordens curtas ao sargento, que bateu continência, se virou e voltou aos homens. Reuniu doze, que selaram os cavalos, montaram e cavalgaram ao encontro dos estranhos. Os outros homens se prepararam para ação rápida. Era possível que os cavaleiros correndo tão rápido para o acampamento fossem amigos dos prisioneiros, tentando libertar seus parentes com um ataque surpresa. Mas Jacot duvidava disso, porque os estranhos não tentavam se esconder. Galopavam rápido para o acampamento, à vista de todos. Podia haver trapaça por trás daquele ar honesto, mas ninguém que conhecesse O Falcão seria tolo o bastante para esperar enganá-lo assim.

En O sargento e seus homens encontraram os árabes a cerca de duzentas jardas do acampamento. Jacot o viu conversando com um homem alto de mantos brancos, claramente o líder. Logo o sargento e o árabe cavalgaram lado a lado em direção ao acampamento. Jacot os esperou. Pararam, puxaram as rédeas e desceram diante dele.

En "Xeque Amor ben Khatour", disse o sargento como apresentação.

En O capitão Jacot olhou para o novo homem. Conhecia quase todos os árabes importantes num raio de várias centenas de milhas, mas nunca tinha visto esse. O homem era alto, parecia desgastado pelo tempo e amargo e hostil. Tinha sessenta anos ou mais. Seus olhos eram estreitos e maldosos. O capitão Jacot não gostou da aparência dele.

En "Então?", perguntou com cuidado.

En O árabe foi direto ao ponto.

En "Achmet ben Houdin é filho da minha irmã", disse. "Se o senhor me entregar ele, vou garantir que não quebre mais as leis francesas."

En Jacot balançou a cabeça. "Isso não pode ser", disse. "Preciso levá-lo comigo. Ele será julgado com justiça por um tribunal civil. Se for inocente, será solto."

En "E se não for inocente?", perguntou o árabe.

En "Ele é acusado de muitos assassinatos. Se for considerado culpado de mesmo um, precisa morrer."

En O árabe mantinha a mão esquerda escondida sob o burnus. Depois a tirou e mostrou uma grande bolsa de pele de cabra, cheia e pesada de moedas. Abriu e deixou parte do dinheiro cair na mão direita. Era tudo ouro francês de boa qualidade. Pelo tamanho da bolsa, o capitão Jacot achou que continha uma pequena fortuna. O xeque Amor ben Khatour devolveu as moedas à bolsa uma a uma. Jacot o observava de perto. Estavam sozinhos, e o sargento tinha se afastado de costas para eles. Então o xeque estendeu a bolsa cheia na palma aberta em direção ao capitão Jacot.

En "Achmet ben Houdin, filho da minha irmã, poderia escapar esta noite", disse. "Hein?"

En O capitão Armand Jacot ficou vermelho até a raiz do cabelo curto. Depois ficou muito pálido e deu meio passo em direção ao árabe. Seus punhos estavam fechados. De repente, mudou de ideia e não agiu no impulso.

En "Sargento!", chamou. O sargento veio rápido e bateu continência.

En "Leve esse cachorro negro de volta ao seu povo", ordenou. "Faça-os partir agora. Atire no primeiro homem que se aproximar do acampamento esta noite."

En O xeque Amor ben Khatour se ergueu em toda a sua altura. Seus olhos cruéis se estreitaram. Segurou a bolsa de ouro na frente dos olhos do oficial francês.

Chapter 1

B1 Português (simplified)

O escaler do Marjorie W. descia flutuando pelo largo Ugambi, levado pela maré e pela corrente. A tripulação descansava depois do trabalho pesado de remar contra a correnteza. Três milhas abaixo deles, o Marjorie W. esperava que voltassem para içar o escaler nos turcos. Logo, todos os homens desviaram os olhos das conversas e devaneios para a margem norte. Ali, um homem estranho gritava para eles com uma voz aguda e rachada, os braços magros estendidos.

Original English

The long boat of the Marjorie W. was floating down the broad Ugambi with ebb tide and current. Her crew were lazily enjoying this respite from the arduous labor of rowing up stream. Three miles below them lay the Marjorie W. herself, quite ready to sail so soon as they should have clambered aboard and swung the long boat to its davits. Presently the attention of every man was drawn from his dreaming or his gossiping to the northern bank of the river. There, screaming at them in a cracked falsetto and with skinny arms outstretched, stood a strange apparition of a man.

Original Português

O escaler da Marjorie W. descia flutuando o largo Ugambi, levado pela vazante e pela corrente. Sua tripulação desfrutava preguiçosamente aquela trégua do árduo trabalho de remar contra a corrente. Três milhas abaixo deles estava a própria Marjorie W., inteiramente pronta para zarpar assim que eles subissem a bordo e içassem o escaler aos turcos. De repente, a atenção de todos os homens se desviou de seus devaneios ou conversas para a margem norte do rio. Ali, gritando para eles com um falsete rachado e os braços magros estendidos, estava a estranha aparição de um homem.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Que diabos é isso?", disse um dos tripulantes.

Original English

"Wot the 'ell?" ejaculated one of the crew.

Original Português

- Mas que diabo? - exclamou um dos tripulantes.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Um homem branco!", murmurou o imediato, e então disse: "Aos remos, rapazes, vamos até lá ver o que ele quer."

Original English

"A white man!" muttered the mate, and then: "Man the oars, boys, and we'll just pull over an' see what he wants."

Original Português

- Um homem branco! - murmurou o imediato, e então: - Aos remos, rapazes, vamos encostar e ver o que ele quer.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Quando se aproximaram da margem, viram uma criatura muito magra, com poucos cabelos brancos, emaranhados e sujos. Estava nu, exceto por uma tanga. Lágrimas escorriam por suas bochechas encovadas e marcadas de varíola. Ele falava com eles numa língua estranha.

Original English

When they came close to the shore they saw an emaciated creature with scant white locks tangled and matted. The thin, bent body was naked but for a loin cloth. Tears were rolling down the sunken pock-marked cheeks. The man jabbered at them in a strange tongue.

Original Português

Quando chegaram perto da margem, viram uma criatura esquálida, com poucos cabelos brancos, embaraçados e emplastrados. O corpo magro e curvado estava nu, salvo por uma tanga. Lágrimas corriam pelas faces encovadas e marcadas de bexigas. O homem tagarelava para eles numa língua estranha.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Russo", arriscou o imediato. "Você entende inglês?", gritou para o homem.

Original English

"Rooshun," hazarded the mate. "Savvy English?" he called to the man.

Original Português

- Russo - arriscou o imediato. - Fala inglês? - gritou ele ao homem.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Ele entendia, e em inglês quebrado implorou que o tirassem daquele país terrível. Uma vez a bordo do Marjorie W., o estranho contou uma história triste de fome, sofrimento e tortura que durara dez anos. Não disse como tinha ido parar na África. Os homens acharam que ele tinha esquecido a vida antes desses anos terríveis. Também não contou seu nome verdadeiro, então só o conheceram como Michael Sabrov. Ele não se parecia em nada com o forte, mas desonesto, Alexis Paulvitch que fora um dia.

Original English

He did, and in that tongue, brokenly and haltingly, as though it had been many years since he had used it, he begged them to take him with them away from this awful country. Once on board the Marjorie W. the stranger told his rescuers a pitiful tale of privation, hardships, and torture, extending over a period of ten years. How he happened to have come to Africa he did not tell them, leaving them to assume he had forgotten the incidents of his life prior to the frightful ordeals that had wrecked him mentally and physically. He did not even tell them his true name, and so they knew him only as Michael Sabrov, nor was there any resemblance between this sorry wreck and the virile, though unprincipled, Alexis Paulvitch of old.

Original Português

Falava, e nessa língua, de modo quebrado e hesitante, como se houvesse muitos anos que não a usava, implorou que o levassem dali, para longe daquele país terrível. Uma vez a bordo da Marjorie W., o estranho contou a seus salvadores uma história lamentável de privações, sofrimentos e tormentos, estendidos por um período de dez anos. Como viera parar na África, não lhes disse, deixando que supusessem que havia esquecido os episódios de sua vida anteriores às provas medonhas que o haviam arruinado mental e fisicamente. Nem mesmo lhes contou seu verdadeiro nome, e assim só o conheceram como Michael Sabrov; e não havia semelhança alguma entre aquele pobre destroço e o viril, embora sem escrúpulos, Alexis Paulvitch de outrora.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Fazia dez anos que o russo tinha escapado da morte enquanto seu amigo Rokoff morria. Muitas vezes durante esses anos, Paulvitch amaldiçoou seu destino. Desejava ter morrido em vez de sofrer tanto.

Original English

It had been ten years since the Russian had escaped the fate of his friend, the arch-fiend Rokoff, and not once, but many times during those ten years had Paulvitch cursed the fate that had given to Nicholas Rokoff death and immunity from suffering while it had meted to him the hideous terrors of an existence infinitely worse than the death that persistently refused to claim him.

Original Português

Fazia dez anos que o russo escapara ao destino de seu amigo, o arquidemônio Rokoff, e não uma vez, mas muitas vezes durante aqueles dez anos, Paulvitch amaldiçoara o destino que dera a Nicholas Rokoff a morte e a imunidade ao sofrimento, enquanto a ele destinara os terrores horrendos de uma existência infinitamente pior que a morte que, obstinadamente, se recusava a reclamá-lo.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Paulvitch correu para a selva quando viu as feras de Tarzan e seu senhor selvagem invadirem o convés do Kincaid. Com medo de que Tarzan o seguisse e capturasse, continuou tropeçando cada vez mais fundo na selva. Por fim, caiu nas mãos de uma tribo canibal selvagem que já conhecia a crueldade de Rokoff. Por algum motivo estranho, o chefe salvou Paulvitch da morte, mas só para lhe dar uma vida de miséria e tortura. Por dez anos ele foi a vítima da tribo. Mulheres e crianças batiam nele e jogavam pedras. Guerreiros o cortavam, feriam e marcavam. Ele também sofreu de muitas febres mortais. Ainda assim, não morreu. A varíola também o atacou, deixando marcas feias no corpo. Por causa da tribo e de todos esses horrores, o rosto de Alexis Paulvitch mudou tanto que nem sua própria mãe o reconheceria. Seu cabelo escuro e grosso virou alguns fios finos, amarelo-esbranquiçados. Seus braços e pernas se curvaram de forma estranha, e ele andava de modo fraco e arrastado, o corpo dobrado para frente. Seus dentes tinham sumido, arrancados por seus senhores selvagens. Até sua mente era só uma sombra do que fora um dia.

Original English

Paulvitch had taken to the jungle when he had seen the beasts of Tarzan and their savage lord swarm the deck of the Kincaid, and in his terror lest Tarzan pursue and capture him he had stumbled on deep into the jungle, only to fall at last into the hands of one of the savage cannibal tribes that had felt the weight of Rokoff's evil temper and cruel brutality. Some strange whim of the chief of this tribe saved Paulvitch from death only to plunge him into a life of misery and torture. For ten years he had been the butt of the village, beaten and stoned by the women and children, cut and slashed and disfigured by the warriors; a victim of often recurring fevers of the most malignant variety. Yet he did not die. Smallpox laid its hideous clutches upon him; leaving him unspeakably branded with its repulsive marks. Between it and the attentions of the tribe the countenance of Alexis Paulvitch was so altered that his own mother could not have recognized in the pitiful mask he called his face a single familiar feature. A few scraggly, yellow-white locks had supplanted the thick, dark hair that had covered his head. His limbs were bent and twisted, he walked with a shuffling, unsteady gait, his body doubled forward. His teeth were gone -- knocked out by his savage masters. Even his mentality was but a sorry mockery of what it once had been.

Original Português

Paulvitch se embrenhara na selva quando vira as feras de Tarzan e seu senhor selvagem invadirem o convés do Kincaid; e, em seu terror de que Tarzan o perseguisse e capturasse, tropeçara cada vez mais fundo na mata, apenas para cair por fim nas mãos de uma das tribos canibais selvagens que haviam sentido o peso do temperamento maléfico e da brutalidade cruel de Rokoff. Algum estranho capricho do chefe dessa tribo salvou Paulvitch da morte somente para lançá-lo numa vida de miséria e tormento. Por dez anos fora o alvo de escárnio da aldeia, espancado e apedrejado por mulheres e crianças, cortado, ferido e desfigurado pelos guerreiros; vítima de febres recorrentes da espécie mais maligna. Ainda assim, não morria. A varíola lhe deixara marcas repulsivas e profundas. Entre a doença e os maus-tratos da tribo, o rosto de Alexis Paulvitch ficou tão alterado que sua própria mãe não teria reconhecido, na máscara lastimável que ele chamava de face, um único traço familiar. Uns poucos fios ralos, amarelo-esbranquiçados, haviam substituído a cabeleira escura e espessa que antes cobria sua cabeça. Seus membros estavam curvados e torcidos; caminhava com passo arrastado e inseguro, o corpo dobrado para a frente. Seus dentes haviam desaparecido - arrancados por seus senhores selvagens. Até sua mente era apenas uma pobre caricatura do que fora um dia.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Levaram-no a bordo do Marjorie W. e o alimentaram e cuidaram dele. Ele ficou um pouco mais forte, mas sua aparência nunca melhorou. Tinham encontrado um ser humano arruinado, e foi isso que ele continuou sendo até a morte. Embora ainda estivesse na casa dos trinta, Alexis Paulvitch podia passar por um homem de oitenta anos. A natureza o fez sofrer mais do que o homem que o tinha ajudado nos crimes.

Original English

They took him aboard the Marjorie W., and there they fed and nursed him. He gained a little in strength; but his appearance never altered for the better -- a human derelict, battered and wrecked, they had found him; a human derelict, battered and wrecked, he would remain until death claimed him. Though still in his thirties, Alexis Paulvitch could easily have passed for eighty. Inscrutable Nature had demanded of the accomplice a greater penalty than his principal had paid.

Original Português

Levaram-no a bordo da Marjorie W., e ali o alimentaram e trataram. Ele recuperou um pouco de força; mas sua aparência jamais mudou para melhor. Um destroço humano, golpeado e arruinado, assim o haviam encontrado; um destroço humano, golpeado e arruinado, assim permaneceria até que a morte o reclamasse. Embora ainda estivesse na casa dos trinta, Alexis Paulvitch facilmente passaria por um homem de oitenta. A Natureza inescrutável exigira do cúmplice uma pena maior do que a paga pelo principal.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Alexis Paulvitch não pensava em vingança. Só sentia um ódio surdo pelo homem que ele e Rokoff tinham tentado destruir e falhado. Também odiava a memória de Rokoff, porque Rokoff o levava a esses horrores. Odiava a polícia de muitas cidades, porque tivera que fugir dela. Odiava a lei, a ordem, e quase tudo mais. Cada momento acordado era cheio de ódio doentio e amargo. Por dentro, ele tinha ficado tão feio quanto por fora. Tinha pouco contato com os homens que o salvaram. Estava fraco demais para trabalhar e amargo demais para companhia, então logo o deixaram sozinho.

Original English

In the mind of Alexis Paulvitch there lingered no thoughts of revenge -- only a dull hatred of the man whom he and Rokoff had tried to break, and failed. There was hatred, too, of the memory of Rokoff, for Rokoff had led him into the horrors he had undergone. There was hatred of the police of a score of cities from which he had had to flee. There was hatred of law, hatred of order, hatred of everything. Every moment of the man's waking life was filled with morbid thought of hatred -- he had become mentally as he was physically in outward appearance, the personification of the blighting emotion of Hate. He had little or nothing to do with the men who had rescued him. He was too weak to work and too morose for company, and so they quickly left him alone to his own devices.

Original Português

Na mente de Alexis Paulvitch não restavam pensamentos de vingança - apenas um ódio surdo ao homem que ele e Rokoff haviam tentado quebrar, e fracassado. Havia também ódio à memória de Rokoff, pois Rokoff o levava aos horrores que padecera. Havia ódio à polícia de uma vintena de cidades das quais tivera de fugir. Havia ódio à lei, ódio à ordem, ódio a tudo. Cada momento da vida desperta do homem era preenchido pelo pensamento mórbido do ódio - mentalmente, como fisicamente em sua aparência exterior, ele se tornara a personificação da emoção arrasadora do Ódio. Tinha pouco ou nenhum contato com os homens que o haviam resgatado. Era fraco demais para trabalhar e sombrio demais para a companhia, e por isso logo o deixaram entregue aos próprios recursos.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O Marjorie W. tinha sido contratado por um grupo de industriais ricos. Estava equipado com um laboratório e uma equipe de cientistas. Foram mandados para achar um produto natural que os industriais vinham comprando da América do Sul por um preço muito alto. Ninguém no navio sabia qual era o produto, exceto os cientistas. Isso não importa para nós, exceto que levou o navio a uma ilha na costa da África depois que Alexis Paulvitch subiu a bordo.

Original English

The Marjorie W. had been chartered by a syndicate of wealthy manufacturers, equipped with a laboratory and a staff of scientists, and sent out to search for some natural product which the manufacturers who footed the bills had been importing from South America at an enormous cost. What the product was none on board the Marjorie W. knew except the scientists, nor is it of any moment to us, other than that it led the ship to a certain island off the coast of Africa after Alexis Paulvitch had been taken aboard.

Original Português

A Marjorie W. fora fretada por um sindicato de industriais ricos, equipada com um laboratório e uma equipe de cientistas, e enviada à procura de algum produto natural que os fabricantes responsáveis pelos custos vinham importando da América do Sul a preço enorme. Qual fosse o produto, ninguém a bordo da Marjorie W. sabia, exceto os cientistas; e isso pouco nos importa, salvo pelo fato de que conduziu o navio a certa ilha ao largo da costa da África depois que Alexis Paulvitch foi recolhido a bordo.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O navio ficou ancorado na costa por várias semanas. A vida a bordo ficou monótona e difícil para a tripulação. Eles iam à terra com frequência, e por fim Paulvitch pediu para ir junto. Ele também estava cansado da mesma vida chata no navio.

Original English

The ship lay at anchor off the coast for several weeks. The monotony of life aboard her became trying for the crew. They went often ashore, and finally Paulvitch asked to accompany them -- he too was tiring of the blighting sameness of existence upon the ship.

Original Português

O navio ficou ancorado diante da costa por várias semanas. A monotonia da vida a bordo tornou-se penosa para a tripulação. Eles iam muitas vezes à terra, e por fim Paulvitch pediu para acompanhá-los - ele também se cansava da uniformidade sufocante da existência no navio.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

A ilha era coberta de árvores, e a selva densa crescia quase até a praia. Os cientistas foram bem para o interior, procurando a coisa valiosa que histórias locais tinham dito que podia ser encontrada ali em grande quantidade. A tripulação pescava, caçava e explorava. Paulvitch andava de um lado para outro na praia, ou deitava na sombra das árvores grandes perto dela. Um dia os homens estavam por perto, olhando o corpo de uma pantera morta por um deles durante uma caçada no interior. Paulvitch dormia debaixo de uma árvore quando uma mão tocou seu ombro. Ele acordou assustado e viu um macaco enorme sentado ao seu lado, olhando-o com atenção. Ficou muito assustado. Olhou para os marinheiros, mas estavam a umas duzentas jardas. O macaco tocou seu ombro de novo e fez sons suaves e súplicas. Paulvitch não viu ameaça nos olhos nem na postura do animal. Levantou-se devagar, e o macaco se ergueu ao seu lado.

Original English

The island was heavily timbered. Dense jungle ran down almost to the beach. The scientists were far inland, prosecuting their search for the valuable commodity that native rumor upon the mainland had led them to believe might be found here in marketable quantity. The ship's company fished, hunted, and explored. Paulvitch shuffled up and down the beach, or lay in the shade of the great trees that skirted it. One day, as the men were gathered at a little distance inspecting the body of a panther that had fallen to the gun of one of them who had been hunting inland, Paulvitch lay sleeping beneath his tree. He was awakened by the touch of a hand upon his shoulder. With a start he sat up to see a huge, anthropoid ape squatting at his side, inspecting him intently. The Russian was thoroughly frightened. He glanced toward the sailors -- they were a couple of hundred yards away. Again the ape plucked at his shoulder, jabbering plaintively. Paulvitch saw no menace in the inquiring gaze, or in the attitude of the beast. He got slowly to his feet. The ape rose at his side.

Original Português

A ilha era densamente arborizada. A selva espessa descia quase até a praia. Os cientistas estavam bem no interior, prosseguindo sua busca pela mercadoria valiosa que rumores nativos no continente os levaram a crer que ali poderia ser encontrada em quantidade comerciável. A gente do navio pescava, caçava e explorava. Paulvitch arrastava-se praia acima e abaixo, ou deitava-se à sombra das grandes árvores que a orlavam. Um dia, enquanto os homens se reuniam a certa distância examinando o corpo de uma pantera abatida pela arma de um deles, que estivera caçando no

interior, Paulvitch dormia sob sua árvore. Foi despertado pelo toque de uma mão em seu ombro. Com um sobressalto sentou-se e viu, agachado a seu lado, um enorme macaco antropoide que o examinava atentamente. O russo ficou completamente apavorado. Olhou para os marinheiros - estavam a duzentas jardas dali. De novo o macaco puxou-lhe o ombro, tagarelando de modo lastimoso. Paulvitch não viu ameaça no olhar inquiridor nem na atitude do animal. Levantou-se devagar. O macaco ergueu-se ao seu lado.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Curvado, o homem se arrastou com cuidado em direção aos marinheiros. O macaco foi junto, segurando um dos seus braços. Estavam quase chegando ao pequeno grupo de homens antes que alguém os visse, e nessa hora Paulvitch já tinha certeza de que a fera não queria fazer mal. O animal parecia acostumado a estar perto de pessoas. Paulvitch então pensou que o macaco valia muito dinheiro, e antes de chegarem aos marinheiros já tinha decidido que devia ser ele a lucrar com isso.

Original English

Half doubled, the man shuffled cautiously away toward the sailors. The ape moved with him, taking one of his arms. They had come almost to the little knot of men before they were seen, and by this time Paulvitch had become assured that the beast meant no harm. The animal evidently was accustomed to the association of human beings. It occurred to the Russian that the ape represented a certain considerable money value, and before they reached the sailors he had decided he should be the one to profit by it.

Original Português

Meio dobrado, o homem afastou-se cautelosamente em direção aos marinheiros. O macaco foi com ele, tomando-lhe um dos braços. Tinham chegado quase ao pequeno grupo de homens antes de serem vistos, e a essa altura Paulvitch já se convencera de que o animal não pretendia fazer mal. A criatura evidentemente estava acostumada à convivência com seres humanos. Ocorreu ao russo que o macaco representava certo valor considerável em dinheiro, e antes de alcançarem os marinheiros ele já decidira que seria ele quem lucraria com isso.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Quando os homens olharam e viram o par estranho vindo em direção a eles, ficaram espantados e correram ao encontro dos dois. O macaco não mostrou medo. Em vez disso, segurou cada marinheiro pelo ombro e olhou de perto no rosto de cada um. Depois de examinar todos, voltou para Paulvitch, parecendo muito desapontado.

Original English

When the men looked up and saw the oddly paired couple shuffling toward them they were filled with amazement, and started on a run toward the two. The ape showed no sign of fear. Instead he grasped each sailor by the shoulder and peered long and earnestly into his face. Having inspected them all he returned to Paulvitch's side, disappointment written strongly upon his countenance and in his carriage.

Original Português

Quando os homens levantaram os olhos e viram o par estranhamente combinado arrastando-se para eles, ficaram tomados de espanto e saíram correndo ao encontro dos dois. O macaco não mostrou sinal de medo. Em vez disso, segurou cada marinheiro pelo ombro e perscrutou longa e seriamente seu rosto. Depois de inspecionar todos, voltou ao lado de Paulvitch, com o desapontamento claramente escrito no semblante e no porte.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Os homens gostaram do macaco. Se reuniram ao redor de Paulvitch e fizeram muitas perguntas. Olharam para seu companheiro. Paulvitch disse que o macaco era dele. Não disse mais nada. Repetiu: "O macaco é meu. O macaco é meu." Um homem ficou cansado de Paulvitch. Decidiu fazer uma brincadeira. Foi atrás do macaco e o cutucou com um alfinete. O macaco se virou muito rápido. Num instante, o animal amigável virou um monstro furioso. O marinheiro estava sorrindo, mas depois ficou com muito medo. Tentou fugir dos braços longos do macaco. Não conseguiu. Pegou uma faca longa do cinto. O macaco tirou a faca da mão dele e a jogou fora. Depois mordeu o ombro do marinheiro com os dentes amarelos.

Original English

The men were delighted with him. They gathered about, asking Paulvitch many questions, and examining his companion. The Russian told them that the ape was his -- nothing further would he offer -- but kept harping continually upon the same theme, "The ape is mine. The ape is mine." Tiring of Paulvitch, one of the men essayed a pleasantry. Circling about behind the ape he prodded the anthropoid in the back with a pin. Like a flash the beast wheeled upon its tormentor, and, in the briefest instant of turning, the placid, friendly animal was metamorphosed to a frenzied demon of rage. The broad grin that had sat upon the sailor's face as he perpetrated his little joke froze to an expression of terror. He attempted to dodge the long arms that reached for him; but, failing, drew a long knife that hung at his belt. With a single wrench the ape tore the weapon from the man's grasp and flung it to one side, then his yellow fangs were buried in the sailor's shoulder.

Original Português

Os homens ficaram encantados com ele. Reuniram-se ao redor, fazendo muitas perguntas a Paulvitch e examinando seu companheiro. O russo lhes disse que o macaco era seu - nada mais oferecia - , mas insistia continuamente no mesmo tema: "O macaco é meu. O macaco é meu." Cansado de Paulvitch, um dos homens tentou uma brincadeira. Dando a volta por trás do macaco, cutucou o antropoide nas costas com um alfinete. Como um relâmpago, a fera voltou-se contra seu atormentador, e, no brevíssimo instante do giro, o animal plácido e amistoso metamorfoseou-se num demônio furioso. O largo sorriso que estava no rosto do marinheiro ao fazer sua pequena piada congelou numa expressão de terror. Ele tentou esquivar-se dos longos braços que se estendiam para ele; mas, falhando, puxou uma longa faca que pendia de seu cinto. Com um só arrancão, o macaco tirou a arma de sua mão e a atirou de lado;

então suas presas amarelas cravaram-se no ombro do marinheiro.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Os companheiros do homem atacaram o macaco com paus e facas. Paulvitch pulava ao redor do grupo furioso e xingando, implorando, gritando e ameaçando. Via seus sonhos de riqueza desaparecerem rápido diante das armas dos marinheiros.

Original English

With sticks and knives the man's companions fell upon the beast, while Paulvitch danced around the cursing, snarling pack mumbling and screaming pleas and threats. He saw his visions of wealth rapidly dissipating before the weapons of the sailors.

Original Português

Com paus e facas, os companheiros do homem caíram sobre a fera, enquanto Paulvitch dançava em torno daquele bando que praguejava e rosnava, murmurando e gritando súplicas e ameaças. Via seus sonhos de riqueza dissiparem-se rapidamente diante das armas dos marinheiros.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Mas o macaco não foi fácil de vencer, mesmo contra tantos atacantes. Levantou-se do marinheiro que tinha começado a briga, sacudiu os ombros enormes e jogou fora dois homens que seguravam suas costas. Depois derrubou um atacante atrás do outro com golpes fortes das mãos abertas. Se movia rápido de um lugar para outro, como um macaquinho pequeno.

Original English

The ape, however, proved no easy victim to the superior numbers that seemed fated to overwhelm him. Rising from the sailor who had precipitated the battle he shook his giant shoulders, freeing himself from two of the men that were clinging to his back, and with mighty blows of his open palms felled one after another of his attackers, leaping hither and thither with the agility of a small monkey.

Original Português

O macaco, contudo, não se revelou presa fácil para a superioridade numérica que parecia destinada a esmagá-lo. Erguendo-se do marinheiro que precipitara a luta, sacudiu os ombros gigantescos, livrando-se de dois homens que se agarravam às suas costas, e com poderosos golpes das palmas abertas derrubou um após outro de seus atacantes, saltando de um lado para outro com a agilidade de um macaquinho.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O capitão e o imediato tinham visto a briga quando estavam desembarcando do Marjorie W. Paulvitch os viu correndo em direção à cena com revólveres na mão, seguidos pelos dois marinheiros que os tinham trazido à praia. O macaco ficou olhando o estrago que tinha feito, e Paulvitch não sabia dizer se ele estava pronto para atacar de novo ou escolhendo quem matar primeiro. O que Paulvitch sabia era que se os oficiais chegassem perto o bastante, logo atirariam na fera a menos que algo fosse feito rápido. O macaco não tinha atacado Paulvitch, mas o russo ainda não tinha certeza do que aconteceria se tentasse parar o animal furioso, agora selvagem de raiva e sentindo cheiro de sangue fresco. Hesitou um momento, depois pensou de novo na riqueza que aquele grande macaco poderia trazer se fosse levado em segurança para uma grande cidade como Londres.

Original English

The fight had been witnessed by the captain and mate who were just landing from the Marjorie W., and Paulvitch saw these two now running forward with drawn revolvers while the two sailors who had brought them ashore trailed at their heels. The ape stood looking about him at the havoc he had wrought, but whether he was awaiting a renewal of the attack or was deliberating which of his foes he should exterminate first Paulvitch could not guess. What he could guess, however, was that the moment the two officers came within firing distance of the beast they would put an end to him in short order unless something were done and done quickly to prevent. The ape had made no move to attack the Russian but even so the man was none too sure of what might happen were he to interfere with the savage beast, now thoroughly aroused to bestial rage, and with the smell of new spilled blood fresh in its nostrils. For an instant he hesitated, and then again there rose before him the dreams of affluence which this great anthropoid would doubtless turn to realities once Paulvitch had landed him safely in some great metropolis like London.

Original Português

A luta fora testemunhada pelo capitão e pelo imediato, que acabavam de desembarcar da Marjorie W., e Paulvitch viu agora esses dois correrem à frente com revólveres em punho, enquanto os dois marinheiros que os haviam trazido à terra vinham logo atrás. O macaco estava parado, olhando em torno para a devastação que causara; mas se aguardava a renovação do ataque ou deliberava qual de seus inimigos exterminaria primeiro, Paulvitch não podia adivinhar. O que podia adivinhar, porém, era que no momento em que os dois oficiais chegassem à distância de tiro da

fera, dariam cabo dela em pouco tempo, a menos que algo fosse feito, e feito depressa, para impedir. O macaco não fizera movimento para atacar o russo, mas ainda assim o homem não tinha certeza do que poderia acontecer se interferisse com a fera selvagem, agora inteiramente despertada para a fúria animal, com o cheiro de sangue recém-derramado ainda fresco em suas narinas. Por um instante hesitou; e então novamente se ergueram diante dele os sonhos de abundância que aquele grande antropeide, sem dúvida, transformaria em realidade assim que Paulvitch o desembarcasse em alguma grande metrópole como Londres.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O capitão agora gritava para Paulvitch sair da frente para poder atirar no animal. Em vez disso, Paulvitch se arrastou até o lado do macaco. Seu cabelo tremia de medo, mas ele se forçou a ficar calmo e segurou o braço do macaco.

Original English

The captain was shouting to him now to stand aside that he might have a shot at the animal; but instead Paulvitch shuffled to the ape's side, and though the man's hair quivered at its roots he mastered his fear and laid hold of the ape's arm.

Original Português

O capitão agora lhe gritava que saísse da frente para que pudesse atirar no animal; mas Paulvitch, em vez disso, arrastou-se até o lado do macaco e, embora os cabelos parecessem estremecer-lhe na raiz, dominou o medo e segurou o braço da fera.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Venha!", ordenou, e puxou a fera para longe dos marinheiros. Muitos deles agora estavam sentados, olhos arregalados de medo, ou se arrastando de joelhos e mãos para longe de quem os tinha vencido.

Original English

"Come!" he commanded, and tugged to pull the beast from among the sailors, many of whom were now sitting up in wide eyed fright or crawling away from their conqueror upon hands and knees.

Original Português

- Venha! - ordenou ele, puxando para afastar a fera de entre os marinheiros, muitos dos quais agora se sentavam de olhos arregalados de medo ou se arrastavam para longe de seu vencedor sobre mãos e joelhos.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Devagar, o macaco se deixou levar para o lado, e não mostrou sinal de querer machucar o russo. O capitão parou a poucos passos do par estranho.

Original English

Slowly the ape permitted itself to be led to one side, nor did it show the slightest indication of a desire to harm the Russian. The captain came to a halt a few paces from the odd pair.

Original Português

Devagar, o macaco permitiu-se ser conduzido para um lado, e não deu a menor indicação de desejo de ferir o russo. O capitão parou a poucos passos do par singular.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Saia da frente, Sabrov!", ordenou. "Vou colocar essa fera num lugar onde ela não morda mais nenhum marinheiro capaz."

Original English

"Get aside, Sabrov!" he commanded. "I'll put that brute where he won't chew up any more able seamen."

Original Português

- Afaste-se, Sabrov! - ordenou. - Vou pôr essa besta num lugar de onde ela não mastigue mais nenhum marinheiro capaz.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"A culpa não foi dele, capitão", disse Paulvitch. "Por favor, não atire nele. Os homens começaram a briga. Eles o atacaram primeiro. Ele é muito manso, e é meu! Não vou deixar você matá-lo." Sua mente confusa pensou de novo nos prazeres que o dinheiro podia comprar em Londres. Ele não podia ter esse dinheiro sem algo de sorte como aquele macaco.

Original English

"It wasn't his fault, captain," pleaded Paulvitch. "Please don't shoot him. The men started it -- they attacked him first. You see, he's perfectly gentle -- and he's mine -- he's mine -- he's mine! I won't let you kill him," he concluded, as his half-wrecked mentality pictured anew the pleasure that money would buy in London -- money that he could not hope to possess without some such windfall as the ape represented.

Original Português

- Não foi culpa dele, capitão - suplicou Paulvitch. - Por favor, não atire nele. Os homens começaram - eles o atacaram primeiro. Veja, ele é perfeitamente manso - e é meu - é meu - é meu! Não deixarei que o mate - concluiu, enquanto sua mentalidade meio destruída figurava novamente os prazeres que o dinheiro compraria em Londres - dinheiro que ele não podia esperar possuir sem algum golpe de sorte como aquele macaco representava.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O capitão abaixou a arma. "Os homens começaram, foi?", disse. "É isso mesmo?" Depois se virou para os marinheiros, que já tinham se levantado. Nenhum deles estava muito machucado, exceto o homem que tinha causado o problema, e ele provavelmente teria o ombro dolorido por uma semana ou mais.

Original English

The captain lowered his weapon. "The men started it, did they?" he repeated. "How about that?" and he turned toward the sailors who had by this time picked themselves from the ground, none of them much the worse for his experience except the fellow who had been the cause of it, and who would doubtless nurse a sore shoulder for a week or so.

Original Português

O capitão abaixou a arma. "Os homens começaram, foi?" repetiu. "Que história é essa?" E voltou-se para os marinheiros, que a essa altura já se levantavam do chão, nenhum deles muito pior depois da experiência, exceto o sujeito que fora a causa dela e que sem dúvida cuidaria de um ombro dolorido por uma semana ou pouco mais.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Foi o Simpson", disse um dos homens. "Ele espetou um alfinete no macaco por trás, e o macaco pegou ele. Bem feito pra ele. E o macaco pegou o resto de nós também. Não posso culpar ele porque todos atacamos ao mesmo tempo."

Original English

"Simpson done it," said one of the men. "He stuck a pin into the monk from behind, and the monk got him -- which served him bloomin' well right -- an' he got the rest of us, too, for which I can't blame him, since we all jumped him to once."

Original Português

- Foi o Simpson - disse um dos homens. - Ele espetou um alfinete no macaco por trás, e o macaco pegou ele - e bem feito pra ele, por Deus - e pegou o resto de nós também, e disso não posso culpá-lo, já que todos nós pulamos em cima dele de uma vez.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O capitão olhou para Simpson, que admitiu, envergonhado, que era verdade. Então o capitão foi até o macaco, como se quisesse ver o temperamento da fera por si mesmo, mas manteve o revólver engatilhado e apontado. Falou gentilmente com o animal, que estava sentado ao lado do russo, olhando de um marinheiro para outro. Quando o capitão se aproximou, o macaco se levantou pela metade e foi em sua direção. Tinha o mesmo olhar estranho e investigativo que mostrara antes com os marinheiros. Chegou bem perto e colocou uma pata no ombro do homem, estudando seu rosto por um bom tempo. Depois pareceu desapontado e soltou quase um suspiro humano. Virou-se para olhar de perto o imediato e os dois marinheiros que tinham vindo com os oficiais. Cada vez suspirava e seguia adiante, e por fim voltou para Paulvitch e sentou de novo ao seu lado. Depois disso, mostrou pouco ou nenhum interesse pelos outros homens e pareceu esquecer a briga.

Original English

The captain looked at Simpson, who sheepishly admitted the truth of the allegation, then he stepped over to the ape as though to discover for himself the sort of temper the beast possessed, but it was noticeable that he kept his revolver cocked and leveled as he did so. However, he spoke soothingly to the animal who squatted at the Russian's side looking first at one and then another of the sailors. As the captain approached him the ape half rose and waddled forward to meet him. Upon his countenance was the same strange, searching expression that had marked his scrutiny of each of the sailors he had first encountered. He came quite close to the officer and laid a paw upon one of the man's shoulders, studying his face intently for a long moment, then came the expression of disappointment accompanied by what was almost a human sigh, as he turned away to peer in the same curious fashion into the faces of the mate and the two sailors who had arrived with the officers. In each instance he sighed and passed on, returning at length to Paulvitch's side, where he squatted down once more; thereafter evincing little or no interest in any of the other men, and apparently forgetful of his recent battle with them.

Original Português

O capitão olhou para Simpson, que admitiu, envergonhado, a verdade da acusação; então aproximou-se do macaco como se quisesse descobrir por si mesmo que temperamento possuía a fera, embora se notasse que mantinha o revólver engatilhado e apontado enquanto o fazia. Falou, contudo, de modo apaziguador ao animal, que se agachava ao lado do russo olhando primeiro para um marinheiro e depois para outro. Quando o

capitão se aproximou, o macaco meio se ergueu e avançou cambaleando para encontrá-lo. Em seu semblante havia a mesma expressão estranha e perscrutadora que marcara o exame de cada marinheiro que encontrara primeiro. Chegou bem perto do oficial e pôs uma pata sobre um de seus ombros, estudando-lhe o rosto atentamente por longo momento; então veio a expressão de desapontamento, acompanhada de algo que era quase um suspiro humano, quando se virou para perscrutar da mesma maneira curiosa os rostos do imediato e dos dois marinheiros que haviam chegado com os oficiais. Em cada caso suspirava e passava adiante, retornando por fim ao lado de Paulvitch, onde se agachou outra vez; dali em diante demonstrou pouco ou nenhum interesse por qualquer dos outros homens, e aparentemente esqueceu sua recente batalha com eles.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Quando o grupo voltou ao Marjorie W., Paulvitch estava com o macaco, e o macaco parecia ansioso para segui-lo. O capitão não impediu isso, então o grande macaco foi silenciosamente aceito como parte da tripulação do navio. Uma vez a bordo, ele examinou cada rosto novo bem de perto e mostrou o mesmo desapontamento toda vez. Os oficiais e cientistas falavam muito sobre ele, mas não conseguiam explicar o jeito estranho como cumprimentava cada pessoa nova. Se tivesse sido encontrado em terra firme, poderiam pensar que já tinha sido animal de estimação de alguém. Mas essa ideia não fazia sentido, já que sua ilha era vazia e isolada do mundo. Ele sempre parecia estar procurando alguém. Durante os primeiros dias da viagem de volta, era comum encontrá-lo farejando em diferentes partes do navio. Mas depois de ter visto todos e explorado cada canto, ficou completamente indiferente a tudo ao redor. Até o russo recebia só um olhar rápido quando trazia comida. Em outros momentos, o macaco parecia apenas tolerá-lo. Nunca mostrou afeto por Paulvitch nem por ninguém mais no Marjorie W., e nunca mais mostrou a raiva selvagem que tinha aparecido quando os marinheiros o atacaram pela primeira vez.

Original English

When the party returned aboard the Marjorie W., Paulvitch was accompanied by the ape, who seemed anxious to follow him. The captain interposed no obstacles to the arrangement, and so the great anthropoid was tacitly admitted to membership in the ship's company. Once aboard he examined each new face minutely, evincing the same disappointment in each instance that had marked his scrutiny of the others. The officers and scientists aboard often discussed the beast, but they were unable to account satisfactorily for the strange ceremony with which he greeted each new face. Had he been discovered upon the mainland, or any other place than the almost unknown island that had been his home, they would have concluded that he had formerly been a pet of man; but that theory was not tenable in the face of the isolation of his uninhabited island. He seemed continually to be searching for someone, and during the first days of the return voyage from the island he was often discovered nosing about in various parts of the ship; but after he had seen and examined each face of the ship's company, and explored every corner of the vessel he lapsed into utter indifference of all about him. Even the Russian elicited only casual interest when he brought him food. At other times the ape appeared merely to tolerate him. He never showed affection for him, or for anyone else upon the Marjorie W., nor did he at any time evince any indication of the savage temper that had marked his resentment of the attack of the sailors upon him at the time that he had come among them.

Original Português

Quando o grupo voltou a bordo da Marjorie W., Paulvitch foi acompanhado pelo macaco, que parecia ansioso por segui-lo. O capitão não opôs obstáculos ao arranjo, e assim o grande antropoide foi tacitamente admitido como membro da companhia do navio. Uma vez a bordo, examinou minuciosamente cada rosto novo, demonstrando em cada caso o mesmo desapontamento que marcara seu exame dos demais. Os oficiais e cientistas a bordo discutiam muitas vezes a fera, mas não conseguiam explicar satisfatoriamente a estranha cerimônia com que saudava cada rosto novo. Tivesse sido descoberto no continente, ou em qualquer outro lugar que não a ilha quase desconhecida que fora seu lar, teriam concluído que em tempos anteriores fora animal de estimação de algum homem; mas essa teoria não se sustentava diante do isolamento de sua ilha desabitada. Parecia procurar alguém continuamente, e durante os primeiros dias da viagem de retorno da ilha era muitas vezes encontrado farejando por várias partes do navio; mas depois de ter visto e examinado todos os rostos da companhia do navio e explorado cada canto da embarcação, caiu na mais completa indiferença a tudo ao redor. Mesmo o russo despertava apenas interesse casual quando lhe trazia comida. Em outras ocasiões, o macaco parecia simplesmente tolerá-lo. Jamais demonstrou afeição por ele, nem por qualquer outra pessoa a bordo da Marjorie W.; tampouco mostrou em momento algum qualquer indício do temperamento selvagem que assinalara seu ressentimento contra o ataque dos marinheiros quando surgira entre eles.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Passava a maior parte do tempo na proa do navio, olhando o horizonte à frente. Parecia saber que o navio ia para um porto onde haveria mais pessoas para examinar. No geral, Ajax (como o chamavam) era considerado o macaco mais incrível e inteligente que qualquer um no Marjorie W. já tinha visto. Sua inteligência não era sua única qualidade impressionante. Seu tamanho e corpo eram muito impressionantes para um macaco. Era claramente velho, mas a idade não parecia ter reduzido suas capacidades físicas ou mentais.

Original English

Most of his time was spent in the eye of the ship scanning the horizon ahead, as though he were endowed with sufficient reason to know that the vessel was bound for some port where there would be other human beings to undergo his searching scrutiny. All in all, Ajax, as he had been dubbed, was considered the most remarkable and intelligent ape that any one aboard the Marjorie W. ever had seen. Nor was his intelligence the only remarkable attribute he owned. His stature and physique were, for an ape, awe inspiring. That he was old was quite evident, but if his age had impaired his physical or mental powers in the slightest it was not apparent.

Original Português

A maior parte de seu tempo era passada na proa do navio, examinando o horizonte à frente, como se fosse dotado de razão suficiente para saber que a embarcação se dirigia a algum porto onde haveria outros seres humanos para se submeterem ao seu exame perscrutador. Em suma, Ajax, como fora apelidado, era considerado o macaco mais notável e inteligente que qualquer pessoa a bordo da Marjorie W. jamais vira. E sua inteligência não era o único atributo notável que possuía. Sua estatura e constituição eram, para um macaco, assombrosas. Que era velho, parecia evidente; mas se a idade lhe prejudicava em algum grau as faculdades físicas ou mentais, isso não se via.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Por fim o Marjorie W. chegou à Inglaterra, e ali os oficiais e cientistas sentiram pena do pobre homem que tinham resgatado da selva. Deram dinheiro a Paulvitch e desejaram a ele e a seu Ajax uma viagem segura.

Original English

And so at length the Marjorie W. came to England, and there the officers and the scientists, filled with compassion for the pitiful wreck of a man they had rescued from the jungles, furnished Paulvitch with funds and bid him and his Ajax Godspeed.

Original Português

E assim, por fim, a Marjorie W. chegou à Inglaterra; e ali os oficiais e os cientistas, cheios de compaixão pelo lamentável destroço humano que haviam resgatado das selvas, forneceram fundos a Paulvitch e desejaram a ele e a seu Ajax boa fortuna.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

No cais e durante a viagem até Londres, o russo teve trabalho de sobra com Ajax. Ele tinha que examinar cada rosto novo na multidão, o que assustava muita gente. Mas no fim, parecia incapaz de encontrar a pessoa que procurava. Então o grande macaco ficou tristemente indiferente e só às vezes mostrava interesse por um rosto que passava.

Original English

Upon the dock and all through the journey to London the Russian had his hands full with Ajax. Each new face of the thousands that came within the anthropoid's ken must be carefully scrutinized, much to the horror of many of his victims; but at last, failing, apparently, to discover whom he sought, the great ape relapsed into morbid indifference, only occasionally evincing interest in a passing face.

Original Português

No cais e durante toda a viagem até Londres, o russo teve trabalho de sobra com Ajax. Cada rosto novo entre os milhares que entravam no alcance do antropeide precisava ser cuidadosamente examinado, para horror de muitas de suas vítimas; mas, por fim, não conseguindo aparentemente descobrir quem procurava, o grande macaco voltou a cair numa indiferença mórbida, apenas ocasionalmente demonstrando interesse por um rosto que passava.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Em Londres, Paulvitch foi direto a um famoso treinador de animais com seu prêmio. O homem ficou muito impressionado com Ajax. Concordou em treiná-lo por uma boa parte do dinheiro das exposições, e por enquanto também pagaria pelo macaco e seu dono.

Original English

In London, Paulvitch went directly with his prize to a certain famous animal trainer. This man was much impressed with Ajax with the result that he agreed to train him for a lion's share of the profits of exhibiting him, and in the meantime to provide for the keep of both the ape and his owner.

Original Português

Em Londres, Paulvitch foi diretamente com seu prêmio a certo famoso domador de animais. Esse homem ficou muito impressionado com Ajax, e o resultado foi concordar em treiná-lo por uma parte de leão dos lucros de sua exposição, e, enquanto isso, prover o sustento tanto do macaco quanto de seu dono.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Assim Ajax chegou a Londres, e mais um elo estranho foi adicionado à cadeia de acontecimentos que afetaria muitas vidas.

Original English

And so came Ajax to London, and there was forged another link in the chain of strange circumstances that were to affect the lives of many people.

Original Português

E assim Ajax chegou a Londres, e ali foi forjado outro elo na cadeia de estranhas circunstâncias que haveriam de afetar a vida de muitas pessoas.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Chapter 2

B1 Português (simplified)

O senhor Harold Moore era um jovem sério, de rosto adoentado. Levava muito a sério a si mesmo, a vida e seu trabalho. Seu trabalho era dar aulas particulares ao jovem filho de um nobre britânico. Sentia que o menino não estava progredindo como os pais tinham direito de esperar, e agora explicava isso com cuidado à mãe do menino.

Original English

Mr. Harold Moore was a bilious-countenanced, studious young man. He took himself very seriously, and life, and his work, which latter was the tutoring of the young son of a British nobleman. He felt that his charge was not making the progress that his parents had a right to expect, and he was now conscientiously explaining this fact to the boy's mother.

Original Português

O senhor Harold Moore era um jovem estudioso, de semblante bilioso. Levava muito a sério a si mesmo, a vida e seu trabalho, sendo este último a instrução do jovem filho de um nobre britânico. Sentia que seu pupilo não fazia o progresso que seus pais tinham direito de esperar, e agora explicava conscienciosamente esse fato à mãe do menino.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Não é que ele não seja esperto", disse. "Se fosse isso, eu teria esperança, porque então poderia usar toda a minha energia para vencer sua falta de inteligência. Mas o problema é que ele é muito inteligente, e aprende tão rápido que não consigo achar falha no jeito como prepara as lições. O que me preocupa é que ele parece não ter interesse nenhum pelos assuntos que estudamos. Faz cada lição apenas como uma tarefa que quer terminar rápido, e tenho certeza de que ele nunca pensa nisso de novo até chegar a hora de estudar outra vez. Parece interessado só em provas de força física e em ler qualquer coisa sobre animais selvagens e a vida e costumes de povos não civilizados. Histórias sobre animais o interessam especialmente. Ele fica horas lendo livros de exploradores africanos, e duas vezes eu o encontrei sentado na cama à noite lendo o livro de Carl Hagenbeck sobre homens e feras."

Original English

"It's not that he isn't bright," he was saying; "if that were true I should have hopes of succeeding, for then I might bring to bear all my energies in overcoming his obtuseness; but the trouble is that he is exceptionally intelligent, and learns so quickly that I can find no fault in the matter of the preparation of his lessons. What concerns me, however, is the fact that he evidently takes no interest whatever in the subjects we are studying. He merely accomplishes each lesson as a task to be rid of as quickly as possible and I am sure that no lesson ever again enters his mind until the hours of study and recitation once more arrive. His sole interests seem to be feats of physical prowess and the reading of everything that he can get hold of relative to savage beasts and the lives and customs of uncivilized peoples; but particularly do stories of animals appeal to him. He will sit for hours together poring over the work of some African explorer, and upon two occasions I have found him setting up in bed at night reading Carl Hagenbeck's book on men and beasts."

Original Português

- Não é que ele não seja inteligente - dizia ele - se isso fosse verdade, eu teria esperanças de sucesso, pois então poderia concentrar todas as minhas energias em vencer sua obtusidade; mas o problema é que ele é excepcionalmente inteligente e aprende tão depressa que não encontro falha alguma na preparação de suas lições. O que me preocupa, contudo, é o fato de que evidentemente não tem interesse algum pelos assuntos que estamos estudando. Apenas cumpre cada lição como uma tarefa de que deve se livrar o mais rápido possível, e tenho certeza de que nenhuma lição volta a entrar em sua mente até que cheguem outra vez as horas de

estudo e recitação. Seus únicos interesses parecem ser façanhas de vigor físico e a leitura de tudo o que consegue obter a respeito de feras selvagens e da vida e costumes de povos não civilizados; mas, particularmente, são as histórias de animais que o atraem. Ele fica horas a fio debruçado sobre a obra de algum explorador africano, e em duas ocasiões o encontrei sentado na cama à noite lendo o livro de Carl Hagenbeck sobre homens e feras.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

A mãe do menino batia o pé nervosamente no tapete perto da lareira.

"O senhor desencoraja isso, é claro?", perguntou ela.

O senhor Moore se remexeu, sem jeito.

Original English

The boy's mother tapped her foot nervously upon the hearth rug.

"You discourage this, of course?" she ventured.

Mr. Moore shuffled embarrassedly.

Original Português

A mãe do menino batia nervosamente o pé no tapete diante da lareira.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Original Português

- O senhor desencoraja isso, naturalmente? - arriscou ela.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Original Português

O senhor Moore remexeu-se, embaraçado.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Eu... ah... tentei tirar o livro dele", respondeu, e um pouco de cor subiu à sua bochecha pálida. "Mas... ah... seu filho é bem forte para alguém tão novo."

Original English

"I -- ah -- essayed to take the book from him," he replied, a slight flush mounting his sallow cheek; "but -- ah -- your son is quite muscular for one so young."

Original Português

- Eu... ah... tentei tirar-lhe o livro - respondeu, com leve rubor subindo-lhe à face amarelada - mas... ah... seu filho é bastante musculoso para alguém tão jovem.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Ele não deixou o senhor tirar?", perguntou a mãe.

Original English

"He wouldn't let you take it?" asked the mother.

Original Português

- Ele não o deixou tirá-lo? - perguntou a mãe.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Não deixou", disse o tutor. "Foi bem-humorado sobre isso, mas insistiu em fingir que era um gorila e eu era um chimpanzé tentando roubar comida dele. Pulou em cima de mim com os rosnados mais selvagens que já ouvi, me ergueu bem acima da cabeça, me jogou na cama dele e agiu como se estivesse me sufocando até a morte. Depois ficou de pé sobre mim e soltou um grito terrível, que disse ser o grito de vitória de um macaco macho. Depois disso, me carregou até a porta, me empurrou para o corredor e trancou a porta do quarto."

Original English

"He would not," confessed the tutor. "He was perfectly good natured about it; but he insisted upon pretending that he was a gorilla and that I was a chimpanzee attempting to steal food from him. He leaped upon me with the most savage growls I ever heard, lifted me completely above his head, hurled me upon his bed, and after going through a pantomime indicative of choking me to death he stood upon my prostrate form and gave voice to a most fearsome shriek, which he explained was the victory cry of a bull ape. Then he carried me to the door, shoved me out into the hall and locked me from his room."

Original Português

- Não deixou - confessou o tutor. - Foi perfeitamente bem-humorado a respeito; mas insistiu em fingir que era um gorila e que eu era um chimpanzé tentando roubar-lhe comida. Saltou sobre mim com os rosnados mais selvagens que já ouvi, ergueu-me completamente acima de sua cabeça, arremessou-me sobre sua cama e, depois de passar por uma pantomima que indicava que me estrangulava até a morte, ficou de pé sobre meu corpo prostrado e soltou um grito assustador, que explicou ser o grito de vitória de um macaco macho. Então me carregou até a porta, empurrou-me para o corredor e trancou-me fora de seu quarto.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Por vários minutos, nenhum dos dois falou. Por fim, a mãe do menino quebrou o silêncio.

Original English

For several minutes neither spoke again. It was the boy's mother who finally broke the silence.

Original Português

Por vários minutos nenhum dos dois voltou a falar. Foi a mãe do menino quem por fim rompeu o silêncio.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"É muito necessário, senhor Moore", disse ela, "que o senhor faça tudo que puder para impedir que Jack faça isso. Ele..." Mas não conseguiu dizer mais nada. Um alto "Uhu!" vindo da janela fez os dois pularem. O quarto ficava no segundo andar, e do outro lado da janela havia uma árvore grande com um galho chegando perto do parapeito. Nesse galho, viram agora a pessoa de quem estavam falando. Era um menino alto e forte, de pé com facilidade no galho curvado, gritando de alegria ao ver as expressões assustadas nos rostos dos dois.

Original English

"It is very necessary, Mr. Moore," she said, "that you do everything in your power to discourage this tendency in Jack, he--"; but she got no further. A loud "Whoop!" from the direction of the window brought them both to their feet. The room was upon the second floor of the house, and opposite the window to which their attention had been attracted was a large tree, a branch of which spread to within a few feet of the sill. Upon this branch now they both discovered the subject of their recent conversation, a tall, well-built boy, balancing with ease upon the bending limb and uttering loud shouts of glee as he noted the terrified expressions upon the faces of his audience.

Original Português

- É muito necessário, senhor Moore - disse ela - que o senhor faça tudo ao seu alcance para desencorajar essa tendência em Jack, ele... - Mas não foi além. Um alto - Uhu! - vindo da direção da janela pôs ambos de pé. O aposento ficava no segundo andar da casa, e diante da janela para a qual sua atenção fora atraída havia uma grande árvore, cujo galho se estendia até poucos pés do peitoril. Sobre esse galho ambos descobriram agora o tema de sua recente conversa: um menino alto e bem-feito, equilibrando-se com facilidade sobre o ramo flexível e soltando gritos de alegria ao notar as expressões aterrorizadas no rosto de seus espectadores.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

A mãe e o tutor correram para a janela. Mas antes de atravessarem metade do cômodo, o menino pulou rápido para o parapeito e entrou.

Original English

The mother and tutor both rushed toward the window but before they had crossed half the room the boy had leaped nimbly to the sill and entered the apartment with them.

Original Português

A mãe e o tutor correram para a janela; mas antes que atravessassem metade do cômodo, o menino saltou agilmente para o peitoril e entrou no aposento com eles.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"O homem selvagem de Bornéu acabou de chegar à cidade", cantou ele. Dançou ao redor da mãe assustada e do tutor chocado como um guerreiro. Depois pôs os braços ao redor do pescoço da mãe e beijou as duas bochechas dela.

Original English

"The wild man from Borneo has just come to town," he sang, dancing a species of war dance about his terrified mother and scandalized tutor, and ending up by throwing his arms about the former's neck and kissing her upon either cheek.

Original Português

- 'O homem selvagem de Bornéu acaba de chegar à cidade' - cantou ele, dançando uma espécie de dança de guerra em torno de sua mãe aterrorizada e de seu tutor escandalizado, e terminando por lançar os braços ao redor do pescoço dela e beijá-la em ambas as faces.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Ai, mamãe", gritou, "tem um macaco maravilhoso e educado sendo exibido num music hall. O Willie Grimsby viu ontem à noite. Ele diz que o bicho faz tudo menos falar. Anda de bicicleta, come com faca e garfo, conta até dez e faz muitas outras coisas incríveis. Posso ir ver também? Ah, por favor, mamãe, por favor, me deixa ir."

Original English

"Oh, Mother," he cried, "there's a wonderful, educated ape being shown at one of the music halls. Willie Grimsby saw it last night. He says it can do everything but talk. It rides a bicycle, eats with knife and fork, counts up to ten, and ever so many other wonderful things, and can I go and see it too? Oh, please, Mother -- please let me."

Original Português

- Oh, mamãe - gritou - há um macaco maravilhoso e educado sendo exibido num dos music halls. Willie Grimsby o viu ontem à noite. Ele diz que o bicho faz tudo menos falar. Anda de bicicleta, come com faca e garfo, conta até dez e muitas outras coisas maravilhosas; eu também posso ir vê-lo? Oh, por favor, mamãe - por favor, deixe-me ir.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

A mãe acariciou gentilmente a bochecha do menino e balançou a cabeça. "Não, Jack", disse. "Você sabe que eu não aprovo esse tipo de espetáculo."

Original English

Patting the boy's cheek affectionately, the mother shook her head negatively. "No, Jack," she said; "you know I do not approve of such exhibitions."

Original Português

Acariciando afetosamente a face do menino, a mãe balançou a cabeça em negativa. "Não, Jack", disse; "você sabe que não aprovo esse tipo de espetáculo."

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Não vejo por que não, mamãe", respondeu o menino. "Todos os outros meninos vão, e vão ao zoológico também. A senhora nunca me deixa fazer nem isso. Qualquer um pensaria que sou uma menina, ou um mole. Ai, papai", exclamou quando a porta se abriu e um homem alto de olhos cinzentos entrou. "Ai, papai, eu posso ir?"

Original English

"I don't see why not, Mother," replied the boy. "All the other fellows go and they go to the Zoo, too, and you'll never let me do even that. Anybody'd think I was a girl -- or a mollycoddle. Oh, Father," he exclaimed, as the door opened to admit a tall gray-eyed man. "Oh, Father, can't I go?"

Original Português

- Não vejo por quê, mamãe - respondeu o menino. - Todos os outros rapazes vão, e vão ao zoológico também, e a senhora nunca me deixa fazer nem isso. Qualquer um pensaria que sou uma menina - ou um fracote. Oh, papai - exclamou, quando a porta se abriu para admitir um homem alto, de olhos cinzentos. - Oh, papai, eu posso ir?

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Ir aonde, meu filho?", perguntou o recém-chegado.

Original English

"Go where, my son?" asked the newcomer.

Original Português

- Ir aonde, meu filho? - perguntou o recém-chegado.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Ele quer ir a um music hall ver um macaco treinado", disse a mãe, olhando de aviso para o marido.

Original English

"He wants to go to a music hall to see a trained ape," said the mother, looking warningly at her husband.

Original Português

- Ele quer ir a um music hall ver um macaco treinado - disse a mãe, lançando ao marido um olhar de aviso.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Quem, o Ajax?", perguntou o homem.

O menino balançou a cabeça, concordando.

Original English

"Who, Ajax?" questioned the man.

The boy nodded.

Original Português

- Quem, Ajax? - perguntou o homem.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Original Português

O menino assentiu.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Bem, não posso culpar você, meu filho", disse o pai. "Eu mesmo gostaria de vê-lo. Dizem que é muito incrível, e muito grande para um macaco. Vamos todos, Jane. O que você acha?" Ele se virou para a esposa, mas ela só balançou a cabeça com firmeza. Depois perguntou ao senhor Moore se já era hora dele e de Jack irem ao gabinete para as lições da manhã. Depois que os dois saíram, ela se virou para o marido.

Original English

"Well, I don't know that I blame you, my son," said the father, "I wouldn't mind seeing him myself. They say he is very wonderful, and that for an anthropoid he is unusually large. Let's all go, Jane -- what do you say?" And he turned toward his wife, but that lady only shook her head in a most positive manner, and turning to Mr. Moore asked him if it was not time that he and Jack were in the study for the morning recitations. When the two had left she turned toward her husband.

Original Português

- Bem, não sei se posso censurá-lo, meu filho - disse o pai. - Eu mesmo não me importaria de vê-lo. Dizem que é muito extraordinário, e que, para um antropeide, é incomumente grande. Vamos todos, Jane - o que me diz? - E voltou-se para a esposa; mas aquela senhora apenas balançou a cabeça de modo muito decidido e, voltando-se para o senhor Moore, perguntou-lhe se já não era hora de ele e Jack estarem no gabinete para as recitações da manhã. Quando os dois saíram, ela se voltou para o marido.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"John", disse ela, "algo precisa ser feito para impedir que Jack goste de qualquer coisa que possa lhe dar vontade de vida selvagem. Temo que ele tenha herdado isso de você. Você sabe, pela sua própria vida, quão forte pode ser o chamado da selva. Sabe como tem sido difícil para você resistir ao desejo forte de voltar à vida na selva. E sabe melhor do que ninguém quão terrível seria para Jack se a selva selvagem parecesse tentadora ou fácil para ele."

Original English

"John," she said, "something must be done to discourage Jack's tendency toward anything that may excite the cravings for the savage life which I fear he has inherited from you. You know from your own experience how strong is the call of the wild at times. You know that often it has necessitated a stern struggle on your part to resist the almost insane desire which occasionally overwhelms you to plunge once again into the jungle life that claimed you for so many years, and at the same time you know, better than any other, how frightful a fate it would be for Jack, were the trail to the savage jungle made either alluring or easy to him."

Original Português

- John - disse ela - algo precisa ser feito para desencorajar em Jack essa tendência para qualquer coisa que possa excitar nele os anseios pela vida selvagem que temo que tenha herdado de você. Você sabe, por experiência própria, quão forte é às vezes o chamado da selva. Sabe que muitas vezes ele exigiu de você uma luta severa para resistir ao desejo quase insano que ocasionalmente o domina de lançar-se outra vez à vida da selva que o reclamou por tantos anos; e ao mesmo tempo sabe, melhor do que qualquer outro, quão terrível seria o destino de Jack se o caminho para a selva selvagem lhe fosse tornado atraente ou fácil.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Duvido que ele possa herdar de mim o gosto pela vida na selva", respondeu o homem. "Não acredito que uma coisa dessas possa passar de pai para filho. E às vezes, Jane, acho que você é rígida demais tentando protegê-lo. O amor dele por animais, por exemplo, e o desejo de ver esse macaco treinado, é natural para um menino saudável da idade dele. Só porque quer ver o Ajax não significa que quer se casar com uma macaca. E mesmo que quisesse, você não teria o direito de gritar 'que vergonha!'" John Clayton, Lord Greystoke, colocou o braço ao redor da esposa e riu gentilmente para o rosto dela antes de beijá-la. Depois ficou mais sério e continuou: "Você nunca contou a Jack sobre minha vida antiga, e não me deixou contar também. Acho que isso foi um erro. Se eu pudesse ter contado a ele sobre Tarzan dos Macacos, poderia ter tirado boa parte da magia e do romantismo que as pessoas imaginam sobre a vida na selva quando não sabem nada sobre ela. Então ele poderia ter aprendido com minha experiência. Mas agora, se a selva um dia o chamar, ele só terá seus próprios sentimentos para guiá-lo. Sei quão fortes esses sentimentos podem ser na direção errada."

Original English

"I doubt if there is any danger of his inheriting a taste for jungle life from me," replied the man, "for I cannot conceive that such a thing may be transmitted from father to son. And sometimes, Jane, I think that in your solicitude for his future you go a bit too far in your restrictive measures. His love for animals -- his desire, for example, to see this trained ape -- is only natural in a healthy, normal boy of his age. Just because he wants to see Ajax is no indication that he would wish to marry an ape, and even should he, far be it from you Jane to have the right to cry 'shame!'" and John Clayton, Lord Greystoke, put an arm about his wife, laughing good-naturedly down into her upturned face before he bent his head and kissed her. Then, more seriously, he continued: "You have never told Jack anything concerning my early life, nor have you permitted me to, and in this I think that you have made a mistake. Had I been able to tell him of the experiences of Tarzan of the Apes I could doubtless have taken much of the glamour and romance from jungle life that naturally surrounds it in the minds of those who have had no experience of it. He might then have profited by my experience, but now, should the jungle lust ever claim him, he will have nothing to guide him but his own impulses, and I know how powerful these may be in the wrong direction at times."

Original Português

- Duvido que haja algum perigo de ele herdar de mim o gosto pela vida da selva - respondeu o homem - pois não consigo conceber que tal coisa possa ser transmitida de pai para filho. E às vezes, Jane, penso que em sua solicitude pelo futuro dele você vai um pouco longe demais em suas medidas restritivas. Seu amor pelos animais - seu desejo, por exemplo, de ver esse macaco treinado - é apenas natural num menino saudável e normal de sua idade. Só porque deseja ver Ajax não significa que queira casar-se com uma macaca; e mesmo que quisesse, longe de você, Jane, o direito de gritar 'vergonha!' E John Clayton, Lord Greystoke, pôs um braço ao redor da esposa, rindo bem-humorado para o rosto dela erguido antes de inclinar a cabeça e beijá-la. Depois, mais sério, prosseguiu: - Você nunca contou a Jack nada sobre minha vida anterior, nem me permitiu fazê-lo, e nisso creio que cometeu um erro. Se eu pudesse ter-lhe contado as experiências de Tarzan dos Macacos, sem dúvida poderia ter retirado grande parte do encanto e do romance da vida selvagem que naturalmente a envolve nas mentes daqueles que não a experimentaram. Ele poderia então ter-se beneficiado de minha experiência; mas agora, se a ânsia da selva algum dia o reclamar, nada terá para guiá-lo senão seus próprios impulsos, e sei quão poderosos estes podem ser, às vezes, na direção errada.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Mas Lady Greystoke só balançou a cabeça, como já tinha feito muitas vezes antes quando esse assunto surgia.

Original English

But Lady Greystoke only shook her head as she had a hundred other times when the subject had claimed her attention in the past.

Original Português

Mas Lady Greystoke apenas balançou a cabeça, como já fizera uma centena de outras vezes quando o assunto lhe reclamara a atenção no passado.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Não, John", disse ela com firmeza. "Nunca vou concordar em colocar qualquer ideia de vida selvagem na cabeça de Jack. Nós dois queremos protegê-lo disso."

Original English

"No, John," she insisted, "I shall never give my consent to the implanting in Jack's mind of any suggestion of the savage life which we both wish to preserve him from."

Original Português

- Não, John - insistiu ela - jamais darei meu consentimento para implantar na mente de Jack qualquer sugestão da vida selvagem da qual ambos desejamos preservá-lo.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Foi à noite que voltaram a falar sobre isso, e dessa vez foi Jack quem trouxe o assunto. Estava sentado numa poltrona grande, lendo, quando de repente ergueu os olhos e falou com o pai.

Original English

It was evening before the subject was again referred to and then it was raised by Jack himself. He had been sitting, curled in a large chair, reading, when he suddenly looked up and addressed his father.

Original Português

Foi à noite que o assunto voltou a ser mencionado, e então foi levantado pelo próprio Jack. Ele estivera sentado, enroscado numa grande poltrona, lendo, quando de repente ergueu os olhos e dirigiu-se ao pai.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Por que", perguntou direto ao ponto, "eu não posso ir ver o Ajax?"

"Sua mãe não aprova", respondeu o pai.

"E o senhor?"

"Essa não é a questão", respondeu Lord Greystoke, evitando o assunto.

"Basta que sua mãe se oponha."

Original English

"Why," he asked, coming directly to the point, "can't I go and see Ajax?"

"Your mother does not approve," replied his father.

"Do you?"

"That is not the question," evaded Lord Greystoke. "It is enough that your mother objects."

Original Português

- Por que - perguntou, indo diretamente ao ponto - não posso ir ver Ajax?

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Original Português

- Sua mãe não aprova - respondeu o pai.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Original Português

- E o senhor?

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Original Português

- Essa não é a questão - esquivou-se Lord Greystoke. - Basta que sua mãe se oponha.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Depois de alguns momentos de silêncio pensativo, o menino disse: "Vou vê-lo. Não sou diferente do Willie Grimsby ou de qualquer outro menino que foi vê-lo. Não fez mal a eles, e não vai me fazer mal. Eu poderia ir sem contar, mas não vou fazer isso. Então estou dizendo agora que vou ver o Ajax."

Original English

"I am going to see him," announced the boy, after a few moments of thoughtful silence. "I am not different from Willie Grimsby, or any other of the fellows who have been to see him. It did not harm them and it will not harm me. I could go without telling you; but I would not do that. So I tell you now, beforehand, that I am going to see Ajax."

Original Português

- Vou vê-lo - anunciou o menino, depois de alguns momentos de silêncio pensativo. - Não sou diferente de Willie Grimsby, nem de qualquer dos outros rapazes que foram vê-lo. Não lhes fez mal, e não me fará mal. Eu poderia ir sem lhes contar; mas não faria isso. Por isso digo agora, antes, que vou ver Ajax.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O menino não parecia rude ou rebelde. Estava apenas expondo os fatos. O pai mal conseguiu esconder um sorriso, ou sua admiração pelo jeito corajoso do filho agir.

Original English

There was nothing disrespectful or defiant in the boy's tone or manner. His was merely a dispassionate statement of facts. His father could scarce repress either a smile or a show of the admiration he felt for the manly course his son had pursued.

Original Português

Não havia nada de desrespeitoso ou desafiador no tom ou na maneira do menino. Era apenas uma declaração impassível de fatos. Seu pai mal conseguiu reprimir um sorriso ou a demonstração da admiração que sentia pelo procedimento viril que o filho adotara.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Admiro sua honestidade, Jack", disse ele. "Vou ser honesto também. Se você for ver o Ajax sem permissão, vou te castigar. Nunca usei castigo físico com você, mas aviso que se desobedecer aos desejos de sua mãe agora, eu vou fazer isso."

Original English

"I admire your candor, Jack," he said. "Permit me to be candid, as well. If you go to see Ajax without permission, I shall punish you. I have never inflicted corporal punishment upon you, but I warn you that should you disobey your mother's wishes in this instance, I shall."

Original Português

- Admiro sua franqueza, Jack - disse ele. - Permita-me ser franco também. Se você for ver Ajax sem permissão, eu o punirei. Nunca lhe infligi castigo corporal, mas aviso que, se desobedecer aos desejos de sua mãe neste caso, eu o farei.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Sim, senhor", respondeu o menino. Depois acrescentou: "Vou te contar, senhor, quando tiver ido ver o Ajax."

Original English

"Yes, sir," replied the boy; and then: "I shall tell you, sir, when I have been to see Ajax."

Original Português

- Sim, senhor - respondeu o menino; e então: - Eu lhe direi, senhor, quando tiver ido ver Ajax.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O quarto do senhor Moore ficava ao lado do quarto do menino, e era hábito dele checar o menino toda noite antes de dormir. Naquela noite, ele foi especialmente cuidadoso, porque tinha acabado de conversar com o pai e a mãe do menino. Eles tinham pedido que ele garantisse que Jack não fosse ao music hall onde o Ajax era exibido. Então, quando abriu a porta do quarto do menino por volta de nove e meia, ficou alarmado, embora não totalmente surpreso, ao encontrar o futuro Lord Greystoke completamente vestido e prestes a sair pela janela aberta do quarto.

Original English

Mr. Moore's room was next to that of his youthful charge, and it was the tutor's custom to have a look into the boy's each evening as the former was about to retire. This evening he was particularly careful not to neglect his duty, for he had just come from a conference with the boy's father and mother in which it had been impressed upon him that he must exercise the greatest care to prevent Jack visiting the music hall where Ajax was being shown. So, when he opened the boy's door at about half after nine, he was greatly excited, though not entirely surprised to find the future Lord Greystoke fully dressed for the street and about to crawl from his open bedroom window.

Original Português

O quarto do senhor Moore ficava ao lado daquele de seu jovem pupilo, e era costume do tutor dar uma olhada no quarto do menino todas as noites quando se preparava para recolher-se. Naquela noite, foi particularmente cuidadoso em não negligenciar seu dever, pois acabara de sair de uma conferência com o pai e a mãe do menino na qual lhe fora impressa a necessidade de exercer o maior cuidado para impedir que Jack visitasse o music hall onde Ajax era exibido. Assim, quando abriu a porta do menino por volta das nove e meia, ficou muito excitado, embora não inteiramente surpreso, ao encontrar o futuro Lord Greystoke completamente vestido para a rua e prestes a sair pela janela aberta do quarto.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O senhor Moore atravessou o quarto rapidamente, mas não foi preciso. Quando o menino o ouviu e percebeu que tinha sido pego, se virou como se estivesse desistindo do plano.

Original English

Mr. Moore made a rapid spring across the apartment; but the waste of energy was unnecessary, for when the boy heard him within the chamber and realized that he had been discovered he turned back as though to relinquish his planned adventure.

Original Português

O senhor Moore deu um salto rápido através do aposento; mas o desperdício de energia foi desnecessário, pois, quando o menino o ouviu no quarto e percebeu que fora descoberto, voltou-se como se renunciasse à aventura planejada.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Aonde você ia?", perguntou o senhor Moore, agitado, sem fôlego.

"Vou ver o Ajax", respondeu o menino, calmamente.

Original English

"Where were you going?" panted the excited Mr. Moore.

"I am going to see Ajax," replied the boy, quietly.

Original Português

- Aonde você ia? - ofegou o excitado senhor Moore.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Original Português

- Vou ver Ajax - respondeu o menino, calmamente.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Estou espantado", gritou o senhor Moore. Mas um momento depois ficou ainda mais chocado. O menino se aproximou, o segurou pela cintura, o ergueu do chão e o jogou de cara na cama, empurrando seu rosto num travesseiro macio.

Original English

"I am astonished," cried Mr. Moore; but a moment later he was infinitely more astonished, for the boy, approaching close to him, suddenly seized him about the waist, lifted him from his feet and threw him face downward upon the bed, shoving his face deep into a soft pillow.

Original Português

- Estou espantado - bradou o senhor Moore; mas um instante depois ficou infinitamente mais espantado, pois o menino, aproximando-se dele, agarrou-o de repente pela cintura, levantou-o do chão e arremessou-o de bruços sobre a cama, enterrando-lhe o rosto num travesseiro macio.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Fica quieto", avisou o vencedor. "Ou eu te sufoco."

Original English

"Be quiet," admonished the victor, "or I'll choke you."

Original Português

- Fique quieto - advertiu o vencedor - ou eu o sufoco.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O senhor Moore lutou, mas não adiantou nada. O que quer que Tarzan dos Macacos tenha passado para o filho, também deu a ele um corpo forte. O tutor estava indefeso nas mãos do menino. Jack se ajoelhou sobre ele, rasgou tiras de um lençol e amarrou as mãos do senhor Moore atrás das costas. Depois o virou, colocou uma mordaca na boca dele e a amarrou com outra tira ao redor da cabeça. O tempo todo, falava numa voz calma e baixa.

Original English

Mr. Moore struggled; but his efforts were in vain. Whatever else Tarzan of the Apes may or may not have handed down to his son he had at least bequeathed him almost as marvelous a physique as he himself had possessed at the same age. The tutor was as putty in the boy's hands. Kneeling upon him, Jack tore strips from a sheet and bound the man's hands behind his back. Then he rolled him over and stuffed a gag of the same material between his teeth, securing it with a strip wound about the back of his victim's head. All the while he talked in a low, conversational tone.

Original Português

O senhor Moore lutou; mas seus esforços foram inúteis. O que quer que Tarzan dos Macacos tenha ou não transmitido ao filho, pelo menos lhe legara um físico quase tão maravilhoso quanto o que ele próprio possuía na mesma idade. O tutor era como massa nas mãos do menino. Ajoelhando-se sobre ele, Jack rasgou tiras de um lençol e amarrou as mãos do homem atrás das costas. Então o virou e colocou entre seus dentes uma mordaca do mesmo material, prendendo-a com uma tira enrolada atrás da cabeça da vítima. Durante todo o tempo falava em tom baixo, de conversa.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Sou Waja, chefe dos Waji", disse ele, "e você é Mohammed Dubn, o xeque árabe que quer matar meu povo e roubar meu marfim." Depois amarrou rapidamente os tornozelos do senhor Moore atrás dos pulsos. "Ah-rá! Vilão! Finalmente te tenho em meu poder. Vou embora agora, mas vou voltar!" O filho de Tarzan então atravessou o quarto, passou pela janela aberta e desceu pelo cano de descida até a liberdade.

Original English

"I am Waja, chief of the Waji," he explained, "and you are Mohammed Dubn, the Arab sheik, who would murder my people and steal my ivory," and he dexterously trussed Mr. Moore's hobbled ankles up behind to meet his hobbled wrists. "Ah -- ha! Villain! I have you in me power at last. I go; but I shall return!" And the son of Tarzan skipped across the room, slipped through the open window, and slid to liberty by way of the down spout from an eaves trough.

Original Português

- Sou Waja, chefe dos Waji - explicou - e o senhor é Mohammed Dubn, o xeque árabe que mataria meu povo e roubaria meu marfim - e habilmente atou os tornozelos do senhor Moore, já presos, para trás, a fim de encontrarem os pulsos amarrados. - Ah, ah! Vilão! Tenho-o finalmente em meu poder. Vou-me embora; mas voltarei! - E o filho de Tarzan atravessou o quarto aos pulos, passou pela janela aberta e deslizou para a liberdade pelo cano de descida de uma calha do beiral.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O senhor Moore se contorceu e se debateu na cama. Tinha certeza de que sufocaria se a ajuda não viesse logo. No pânico, rolou para fora da cama. A dor da queda o ajudou a pensar com mais clareza. Já não estava assustado demais para raciocinar. Ficou parado tentando achar uma saída. Então lembrou que o quarto embaixo era onde Lord e Lady Greystoke estavam sentados quando ele os deixou. Achou que talvez já tivessem saído, mas a única coisa que podia fazer era tentar chamar a atenção de alguém lá embaixo. Depois de muitas tentativas falhas, conseguiu bater a ponta da bota no chão. Continuou fazendo isso por um bom tempo. Por fim ouviu passos na escada e depois uma batida na porta. O senhor Moore bateu com força com a ponta do pé, já que não podia responder de outro jeito. A batida veio de novo depois de uma pausa. Ele bateu outra vez. Será que nunca abririam a porta? Rolou devagar em direção à ajuda. Se conseguisse chegar até a porta e apoiar as costas nela, poderia bater na base e certamente seria ouvido. A batida veio de novo, um pouco mais alta, e depois uma voz disse: "Senhor Jack!"

Original English

Mr. Moore wriggled and struggled about the bed. He was sure that he should suffocate unless aid came quickly. In his frenzy of terror he managed to roll off the bed. The pain and shock of the fall jolted him back to something like sane consideration of his plight. Where before he had been unable to think intelligently because of the hysterical fear that had claimed him he now lay quietly searching for some means of escape from his dilemma. It finally occurred to him that the room in which Lord and Lady Greystoke had been sitting when he left them was directly beneath that in which he lay upon the floor. He knew that some time had elapsed since he had come up stairs and that they might be gone by this time, for it seemed to him that he had struggled about the bed, in his efforts to free himself, for an eternity. But the best that he could do was to attempt to attract attention from below, and so, after many failures, he managed to work himself into a position in which he could tap the toe of his boot against the floor. This he proceeded to do at short intervals, until, after what seemed a very long time, he was rewarded by hearing footsteps ascending the stairs, and presently a knock upon the door. Mr. Moore tapped vigorously with his toe -- he could not reply in any other way. The knock was repeated after a moment's silence. Again Mr. Moore tapped. Would they never open the door! Laboriously he rolled in the direction of succor. If he could get his back against the door he could then tap upon its base, when surely he must be heard. The knocking was repeated a little louder, and finally a voice called: "Mr. Jack!"

Original Português

O senhor Moore contorceu-se e debateu-se sobre a cama. Tinha certeza de que sufocaria se a ajuda não viesse depressa. Em seu frenesi de terror, conseguiu rolar para fora da cama. A dor e o choque da queda o trouxeram de volta a uma consideração mais sensata de sua situação. Onde antes fora incapaz de pensar inteligentemente por causa do medo histórico que o dominara, agora jazia quieto, procurando algum meio de escapar de seu dilema. Ocorreu-lhe finalmente que o aposento em que Lord e Lady Greystoke estavam sentados quando ele os deixara ficava diretamente abaixo daquele em que agora estava no chão. Sabia que algum tempo se passara desde que subira as escadas e que talvez eles já tivessem ido, pois lhe parecia que se debatera sobre a cama, tentando libertar-se, por uma eternidade. Mas o melhor que podia fazer era tentar atrair a atenção de baixo, e assim, depois de muitas falhas, conseguiu colocar-se numa posição em que podia bater a ponta da bota contra o assoalho. Começou a fazê-lo a curtos intervalos até que, depois do que lhe pareceu muito tempo, foi recompensado ao ouvir passos subindo a escada e, logo, uma batida na porta. O senhor Moore bateu vigorosamente com a ponta do pé - não podia responder de outro modo. A batida se repetiu após um momento de silêncio. De novo o senhor Moore bateu. Será que nunca abririam a porta? Laboriosamente rolou na direção do socorro. Se conseguisse encostar as costas contra a porta, poderia então bater em sua base, quando certamente seria ouvido. As batidas se repetiram um pouco mais altas, e finalmente uma voz chamou: "Senhor Jack!"

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Era um dos criados da casa, e o senhor Moore conhecia a voz. Quase estourou um vaso sanguíneo tentando gritar "entre" através da mordança. Depois de um momento, o homem bateu de novo, mais alto dessa vez, e chamou o nome do menino outra vez. Como ninguém respondeu, ele girou a maçaneta. Nesse mesmo instante, o senhor Moore de repente se lembrou de algo que o encheu de terror novamente: ele mesmo tinha trancado a porta quando entrou no quarto.

Original English

It was one of the house men -- Mr. Moore recognized the fellow's voice. He came near to bursting a blood vessel in an endeavor to scream "come in" through the stifling gag. After a moment the man knocked again, quite loudly and again called the boy's name. Receiving no reply he turned the knob, and at the same instant a sudden recollection filled the tutor anew with numbing terror -- he had, himself, locked the door behind him when he had entered the room.

Original Português

Era um dos criados da casa - o senhor Moore reconheceu a voz do sujeito. Quase estourou um vaso sanguíneo no esforço de gritar "entre" através da mordança sufocante. Depois de um momento, o homem bateu outra vez, bem alto, e voltou a chamar o nome do menino. Sem receber resposta, girou a maçaneta, e no mesmo instante uma súbita lembrança encheu novamente o tutor de terror paralisante - ele próprio havia trancado a porta atrás de si ao entrar no quarto.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Ele ouviu o criado tentar a porta várias vezes e depois ir embora. Depois disso, o senhor Moore desmaiou.

Original English

He heard the servant try the door several times and then depart. Upon which Mr. Moore swooned.

Original Português

Ouviu o criado tentar a porta várias vezes e depois afastar-se. Diante disso, o senhor Moore desmaiou.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Enquanto isso, Jack estava curtindo muito o music hall. Tinha chegado bem na hora em que o número do Ajax estava começando. Comprou um lugar num camarote e se inclinava sobre a grade, olhando o macaco enorme com olhos arregalados. O treinador notou o rosto bonito e ansioso do menino. Um dos truques do Ajax era entrar em um ou mais camarotes durante o número, como se procurasse um parente perdido, como o treinador explicava. O homem viu que mandar o Ajax até o camarote com esse menino bonito provavelmente o assustaria, porque a fera grande e peluda era muito forte e estava perto demais.

Original English

In the meantime Jack was enjoying to the full the stolen pleasures of the music hall. He had reached the temple of mirth just as Ajax's act was commencing, and having purchased a box seat was now leaning breathlessly over the rail watching every move of the great ape, his eyes wide in wonder. The trainer was not slow to note the boy's handsome, eager face, and as one of Ajax's biggest hits consisted in an entry to one or more boxes during his performance, ostensibly in search of a long-lost relative, as the trainer explained, the man realized the effectiveness of sending him into the box with the handsome boy, who, doubtless, would be terror stricken by proximity to the shaggy, powerful beast.

Original Português

Enquanto isso, Jack desfrutava plenamente os prazeres furtivos do music hall. Chegara ao templo da diversão justamente quando o número de Ajax começava e, tendo comprado um camarote, inclinava-se agora, sem fôlego, sobre a balaustrada, observando cada movimento do grande macaco, os olhos arregalados de maravilha. O treinador não tardou a notar o rosto bonito e ávido do menino; e, como um dos maiores sucessos de Ajax consistia em uma entrada em um ou mais camarotes durante a apresentação, ostensivamente em busca de um parente há muito perdido, como explicava o treinador, o homem percebeu a eficácia de enviá-lo ao camarote com o belo garoto, que, sem dúvida, ficaria tomado de terror pela proximidade da fera peluda e poderosa.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Então, na hora do macaco voltar de trás do palco em resposta aos aplausos, o treinador apontou o Ajax para o camarote onde o menino estava sentado sozinho. O macaco enorme pulou do palco para o lado do menino. Mas se o treinador esperava medo e risadas, estava errado. Um sorriso largo apareceu no rosto do menino, e ele colocou a mão no braço peludo do macaco. O Ajax segurou o menino pelos dois ombros e olhou de perto no rosto dele, enquanto o menino acariciava sua cabeça e falava baixinho com ele.

Original English

When the time came, therefore, for the ape to return from the wings in reply to an encore the trainer directed its attention to the boy who chanced to be the sole occupant of the box in which he sat. With a spring the huge anthropoid leaped from the stage to the boy's side; but if the trainer had looked for a laughable scene of fright he was mistaken. A broad smile lighted the boy's features as he laid his hand upon the shaggy arm of his visitor. The ape, grasping the boy by either shoulder, peered long and earnestly into his face, while the latter stroked his head and talked to him in a low voice.

Original Português

Quando chegou a hora, portanto, de o macaco retornar dos bastidores em resposta a um bis, o treinador dirigiu sua atenção para o menino, que por acaso era o único ocupante do camarote em que se sentava. Com um salto, o enorme antropeide pulou do palco para o lado do menino; mas, se o treinador esperava uma cena risível de medo, enganou-se. Um amplo sorriso iluminou as feições do garoto enquanto ele pousava a mão no braço peludo de seu visitante. O macaco, segurando o menino por ambos os ombros, fitou-lhe o rosto longa e seriamente, enquanto este lhe acariciava a cabeça e falava com ele em voz baixa.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O Ajax nunca tinha gastado tanto tempo examinando alguém antes. Parecia perturbado e muito animado. Tagarelava e murmurava para o menino, e o treinador nunca o tinha visto mostrar tanta gentileza com um ser humano. Logo o macaco subiu para dentro do camarote e se aconchegou perto do menino. A plateia ficou encantada. Ficaram ainda mais felizes quando o tempo do treinador acabou e ele tentou fazer o Ajax sair do camarote. O macaco não se mexeu. O gerente ficou irritado com o atraso e mandou o treinador se apressar. Mas quando o treinador entrou no camarote para puxar o Ajax relutante, foi recebido com dentes afiados à mostra e rosnados ameaçadores.

Original English

Never had Ajax devoted so long a time to an examination of another as he did in this instance. He seemed troubled and not a little excited, jabbering and mumbling to the boy, and now caressing him, as the trainer had never seen him caress a human being before. Presently he clambered over into the box with him and snuggled down close to the boy's side. The audience was delighted; but they were still more delighted when the trainer, the period of his act having elapsed, attempted to persuade Ajax to leave the box. The ape would not budge. The manager, becoming excited at the delay, urged the trainer to greater haste, but when the latter entered the box to drag away the reluctant Ajax he was met by bared fangs and menacing growls.

Original Português

Nunca Ajax dedicara tanto tempo ao exame de outra pessoa como nessa ocasião. Parecia perturbado e um pouco excitado, tagarelando e murmurando para o menino, e ora acariciando-o, como o treinador jamais o vira acariciar um ser humano antes. Logo escalou para dentro do camarote com ele e aconchegou-se perto do lado do menino. A plateia ficou encantada; mas ficou ainda mais encantada quando o treinador, esgotado o tempo de seu número, tentou persuadir Ajax a deixar o camarote. O macaco não se moveu. O gerente, excitado com o atraso, instou o treinador a apressar-se; mas, quando este entrou no camarote para arrastar o relutante Ajax, foi recebido por presas à mostra e rosnados ameaçadores.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

A plateia estava cheia de alegria. Aplaudiram o macaco. Aplaudiram o menino. Também gritaram e zombaram do treinador e do gerente, que sem querer se mostrou e tentou ajudar o treinador.

Original English

The audience was delirious with joy. They cheered the ape. They cheered the boy, and they hooted and jeered at the trainer and the manager, which luckless individual had inadvertently shown himself and attempted to assist the trainer.

Original Português

A plateia delirava de alegria. Aplaudia o macaco. Aplaudia o menino, e vaiava e zombava do treinador e do gerente, infeliz indivíduo que inadvertidamente se deixara ver e tentara auxiliar o treinador.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Por fim, o treinador ficou desesperado. Viu que se a rebelião do macaco não fosse parada logo, o animal poderia ficar inútil para exibições futuras. Correu ao camarim e pegou um chicote pesado. Voltou ao camarote, mas quando ameaçou o Ajax com ele, encontrou dois inimigos furiosos em vez de um. O menino tinha se levantado e pegado uma cadeira. Ficou de pé ao lado do macaco, pronto para defender seu novo amigo. O sorriso tinha sumido do rosto bonito. Seus olhos cinzentos fizeram o treinador parar e pensar. Ao seu lado estava o macaco gigante, rosnando e pronto.

Original English

Finally, reduced to desperation and realizing that this show of mutiny upon the part of his valuable possession might render the animal worthless for exhibition purposes in the future if not immediately subdued, the trainer had hastened to his dressing room and procured a heavy whip. With this he now returned to the box; but when he had threatened Ajax with it but once he found himself facing two infuriated enemies instead of one, for the boy had leaped to his feet, and seizing a chair was standing ready at the ape's side to defend his new found friend. There was no longer a smile upon his handsome face. In his gray eyes was an expression which gave the trainer pause, and beside him stood the giant anthropoid growling and ready.

Original Português

Por fim, reduzido ao desespero e percebendo que aquela demonstração de motim por parte de sua valiosa possessão poderia tornar o animal inútil para exibição no futuro se não fosse imediatamente subjugado, o treinador correu a seu camarim e apanhou um chicote pesado. Com ele retornou agora ao camarote; mas bastou ameaçar Ajax uma só vez para descobrir-se diante de dois inimigos enfurecidos em vez de um, pois o menino saltara de pé e, agarrando uma cadeira, estava pronto ao lado do macaco para defender seu recém-descoberto amigo. Já não havia sorriso no rosto bonito. Em seus olhos cinzentos havia uma expressão que fez o treinador hesitar, e a seu lado estava o antropoide gigante, rosnando e pronto.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Ninguém pode saber exatamente o que teria acontecido se a ajuda não tivesse chegado a tempo. Mas o treinador provavelmente teria sido atacado com força, no mínimo, pelo jeito como os dois o encararam.

Original English

What might have happened, but for a timely interruption, may only be surmised; but that the trainer would have received a severe mauling, if nothing more, was clearly indicated by the attitudes of the two who faced him.

Original Português

O que poderia ter acontecido, não fosse uma interrupção oportuna, só se pode conjecturar; mas que o treinador teria recebido uma severa surra, se nada mais, ficava claramente indicado pelas atitudes dos dois que o enfrentavam.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Um homem de rosto pálido correu para a biblioteca dos Greystoke para dizer que tinha encontrado a porta de Jack trancada. Tinha batido e chamado muitas vezes, mas não houve resposta. Em vez disso, ouviu uma batida estranha e o som de algo se movendo no chão, como se fosse um corpo.

Original English

It was a pale-faced man who rushed into the Greystoke library to announce that he had found Jack's door locked and had been able to obtain no response to his repeated knocking and calling other than a strange tapping and the sound of what might have been a body moving about upon the floor.

Original Português

Foi um homem de rosto pálido que entrou correndo na biblioteca dos Greystoke para anunciar que encontrara a porta de Jack trancada e que não conseguira obter resposta a suas repetidas batidas e chamados, exceto um estranho bater e o som do que poderia ter sido um corpo movendo-se pelo assoalho.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

John Clayton subiu a escada de quatro em quatro degraus. Sua esposa e o criado o seguiram depressa. Chamou o nome do filho bem alto, mas não teve resposta. Então jogou todo o seu peso, e toda a força de seus músculos poderosos, contra a porta pesada. As dobradiças de ferro estalaram e a madeira quebrou, e a porta arrebentou.

Original English

Four steps at a time John Clayton took the stairs that led to the floor above. His wife and the servant hurried after him. Once he called his son's name in a loud voice; but receiving no reply he launched his great weight, backed by all the undiminished power of his giant muscles, against the heavy door. With a snapping of iron butts and a splintering of wood the obstacle burst inward.

Original Português

De quatro em quatro degraus John Clayton subiu a escada que levava ao andar superior. Sua esposa e o criado apressaram-se atrás dele. Uma vez chamou o nome do filho em voz alta; mas, não recebendo resposta, lançou seu grande peso, sustentado por toda a força intacta de seus músculos gigantescos, contra a pesada porta. Com estalo de dobradiças de ferro e estilhaçamento de madeira, o obstáculo rebentou para dentro.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

No pé da porta estava o corpo inconsciente do senhor Moore, e a porta caiu sobre ele com um barulho alto. Tarzan pulou pela abertura, e um momento depois o quarto ficou iluminado por uma dúzia de lâmpadas elétricas.

Original English

At its foot lay the body of the unconscious Mr. Moore, across whom it fell with a resounding thud. Through the opening leaped Tarzan, and a moment later the room was flooded with light from a dozen electric bulbs.

Original Português

A seus pés jazia o corpo inconsciente do senhor Moore, sobre o qual a porta caiu com um baque retumbante. Pela abertura saltou Tarzan, e um momento depois o quarto se inundou de luz de uma dúzia de lâmpadas elétricas.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Levaram vários minutos para encontrar o tutor, porque a porta o cobria quase completamente. Por fim o tiraram, cortaram a mordação e as cordas, e deram bastante água fria. Isso ajudou ele a recobrar a consciência.

Original English

It was several minutes before the tutor was discovered, so completely had the door covered him; but finally he was dragged forth, his gag and bonds cut away, and a liberal application of cold water had hastened returning consciousness.

Original Português

Passaram-se vários minutos antes que o tutor fosse descoberto, tão completamente a porta o cobria; mas por fim foi arrastado para fora, sua mordação e amarras cortadas, e uma generosa aplicação de água fria apressou o retorno da consciência.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Onde está o Jack?", foi a primeira pergunta de John Clayton. Depois perguntou: "Quem fez isso?" Estava pensando em Rokoff e temendo que Jack tivesse sido levado de novo.

Original English

"Where is Jack?" was John Clayton's first question, and then; "Who did this?" as the memory of Rokoff and the fear of a second abduction seized him.

Original Português

- Onde está Jack? - foi a primeira pergunta de John Clayton, e então: - Quem fez isto? - quando a lembrança de Rokoff e o temor de um segundo rapto se apoderaram dele.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Devagar, o senhor Moore se levantou. Olhou ao redor do quarto. Aos poucos, reuniu seus pensamentos. Então os detalhes de sua experiência terrível voltaram para ele.

Original English

Slowly Mr. Moore staggered to his feet. His gaze wandered about the room. Gradually he collected his scattered wits. The details of his recent harrowing experience returned to him.

Original Português

Devagar, o senhor Moore cambaleou até ficar de pé. Seu olhar vagou pelo quarto. Aos poucos reuniu os pensamentos dispersos. Os detalhes de sua recente experiência angustiante voltaram-lhe à mente.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Suas primeiras palavras foram: "Peço demissão, senhor, a partir de agora. O senhor não precisa de um tutor para seu filho. Precisa de um domador de animais selvagens."

Original English

"I tender my resignation, sir, to take effect at once," were his first words. "You do not need a tutor for your son -- what he needs is a wild animal trainer."

Original Português

- Apresento minha demissão, senhor, com efeito imediato - foram suas primeiras palavras. - O senhor não precisa de tutor para seu filho - o que ele precisa é de um domador de feras.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Mas onde ele está?", gritou Lady Greystoke.

"Foi ver o Ajax."

Original English

"But where is he?" cried Lady Greystoke.

"He has gone to see Ajax."

Original Português

- Mas onde ele está? - gritou Lady Greystoke.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Original Português

- Foi ver Ajax.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Tarzan mal conseguiu se segurar para não sorrir. Viu que o tutor estava mais assustado do que machucado. Depois mandou trazer seu carro fechado e partiu para um conhecido music hall.

Original English

It was with difficulty that Tarzan restrained a smile, and after satisfying himself that the tutor was more scared than injured, he ordered his closed car around and departed in the direction of a certain well-known music hall.

Original Português

Foi com dificuldade que Tarzan conteve um sorriso; e, depois de certificar-se de que o tutor estava mais assustado do que ferido, mandou trazer seu automóvel fechado e partiu na direção de certo conhecido music hall.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Chapter 3

B1 Português (simplified)

O treinador ergueu o chicote e hesitou por um momento na porta do camarote, onde o menino e o macaco o encaravam. Então um homem alto e de ombros largos passou por ele e entrou. Quando o menino viu o recém-chegado, um leve rubor subiu às suas bochechas.

Original English

As the trainer, with raised lash, hesitated an instant at the entrance to the box where the boy and the ape confronted him, a tall broad-shouldered man pushed past him and entered. As his eyes fell upon the newcomer a slight flush mounted the boy's cheeks.

Original Português

Enquanto o treinador, com o chicote erguido, hesitava por um instante à entrada do camarote onde o menino e o macaco o enfrentavam, um homem alto, de ombros largos, passou por ele e entrou. Ao ver o recém-chegado, um leve rubor subiu às faces do menino.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Papai!", gritou.

Original English

"Father!" he exclaimed.

Original Português

- Papai! - exclamou.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O macaco olhou uma vez para o lorde inglês, depois pulou em sua direção, chamando com sons agitados. O homem arregalou os olhos de surpresa e ficou parado, como se tivesse virado pedra.

Original English

The ape gave one look at the English lord, and then leaped toward him, calling out in excited jabbering. The man, his eyes going wide in astonishment, stopped as though turned to stone.

Original Português

O macaco lançou um olhar ao lorde inglês e então saltou em sua direção, soltando chamados em tagarelice excitada. O homem, arregalando os olhos de espanto, parou como se transformado em pedra.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Akut!", gritou.

Original English

"Akut!" he cried.

Original Português

- Akut! - gritou.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O menino olhou confuso do macaco para o pai, e do pai para o macaco. O treinador ficou chocado ao ouvir o que veio a seguir. Do inglês saíram sons de macaco, e o macaco enorme que o segurava respondeu do mesmo jeito.

Original English

The boy looked, bewildered, from the ape to his father, and from his father to the ape. The trainer's jaw dropped as he listened to what followed, for from the lips of the Englishman flowed the gutturals of an ape that were answered in kind by the huge anthropoid that now clung to him.

Original Português

O menino olhou, atônito, do macaco para o pai e do pai para o macaco. O queixo do treinador caiu enquanto ouvia o que se seguiu, pois dos lábios do inglês fluíam os guturais de um macaco, respondidos na mesma espécie pelo enorme antropeide que agora se agarrava a ele.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Nos bastidores, um velho horrivelmente curvado e feio observava a cena no camarote. Seu rosto marcado de varíola mudava rápido de uma expressão para outra, do prazer ao medo.

Original English

And from the wings a hideously bent and disfigured old man watched the tableau in the box, his pock-marked features working spasmodically in varying expressions that might have marked every sensation in the gamut from pleasure to terror.

Original Português

E dos bastidores, um velho horrivelmente curvado e desfigurado observava o quadro no camarote, suas feições marcadas de bexigas trabalhando espasmodicamente em expressões variadas que poderiam ter assinalado qualquer sensação na gama que vai do prazer ao terror.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Faz muito tempo que procuro por você, Tarzan", disse Akut. "Agora que te achei, vou para sua selva e vou viver lá para sempre."

Original English

"Long have I looked for you, Tarzan," said Akut. "Now that I have found you I shall come to your jungle and live there always."

Original Português

- Há muito tempo procuro por você, Tarzan - disse Akut. - Agora que o encontrei, irei para sua selva e viverei lá para sempre.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O homem acariciou a cabeça da fera. Pela mente dele passou rápido uma sequência de lembranças que o levaram fundo na floresta africana primitiva, onde essa fera enorme, parecida com um homem, tinha lutado ombro a ombro com ele anos antes. Viu o negro Mugambi balançando sua maça mortal, e ao lado deles, com presas à mostra e bigodes eriçados, Sheeta, o terrível. Bem perto do selvagem e da pantera selvagem vinham os macacos horrendos de Akut. O homem suspirou. O desejo pela selva que achava morto se ergueu forte de novo nele. Ah, se ao menos pudesse voltar, mesmo que por um mês curto, sentir os galhos folhosos roçando sua pele nua, cheirar o mofo úmido da vegetação morta que é incenso e mirra para quem nasce na selva, sentir a chegada silenciosa dos grandes caçadores em seu rastro, caçar e ser caçado, matar! A imagem o atraía. E então veio outra imagem: uma mulher de rosto doce, ainda jovem e bonita; amigos; um lar; um filho. Ele encolheu os ombros gigantes.

Original English

The man stroked the beast's head. Through his mind there was running rapidly a train of recollection that carried him far into the depths of the primeval African forest where this huge, man-like beast had fought shoulder to shoulder with him years before. He saw the black Mugambi wielding his deadly knob-stick, and beside them, with bared fangs and bristling whiskers, Sheeta the terrible; and pressing close behind the savage and the savage panther, the hideous apes of Akut. The man sighed. Strong within him surged the jungle lust that he had thought dead. Ah! if he could go back even for a brief month of it, to feel again the brush of leafy branches against his naked hide; to smell the musty rot of dead vegetation -- frankincense and myrrh to the jungle born; to sense the noiseless coming of the great carnivora upon his trail; to hunt and to be hunted; to kill! The picture was alluring. And then came another picture -- a sweet-faced woman, still young and beautiful; friends; a home; a son. He shrugged his giant shoulders.

Original Português

O homem acariciou a cabeça da fera. Pela mente lhe corria rapidamente uma cadeia de recordações que o levava para as profundezas da floresta africana primordial, onde aquela enorme fera semelhante a homem lutara ombro a ombro com ele anos antes. Via o negro Mugambi manejando sua mortífera maça, e ao lado deles, com presas descobertas e bigodes eriçados, Sheeta, o terrível; e logo atrás do selvagem e da pantera selvagem, os horrendos macacos de Akut. O homem suspirou. Forte dentro dele subiu o desejo da selva que julgara morto. Ah! se pudesse

voltar, ainda que por um breve mês, sentir outra vez o roçar dos ramos folhosos contra a pele nua; aspirar o bolor úmido da vegetação morta - incenso e mirra para quem nasceu na selva; perceber a aproximação silenciosa dos grandes carnívoros em seu rastro; caçar e ser caçado; matar! A imagem era sedutora. E então veio outra imagem - uma mulher de rosto doce, ainda jovem e bela; amigos; um lar; um filho. Ele encolheu os ombros gigantescos.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Não pode ser, Akut", disse. "Mas se você quer voltar, vou garantir que isso aconteça. Você não poderia ser feliz aqui. Eu talvez não seja feliz lá."

Original English

"It cannot be, Akut," he said; "but if you would return, I shall see that it is done. You could not be happy here -- I may not be happy there."

Original Português

- Não pode ser, Akut - disse - mas, se deseja voltar, providenciarei para que isso seja feito. Você não poderia ser feliz aqui - eu talvez não seja feliz lá.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O treinador deu um passo à frente. O macaco mostrou os dentes e rosnou.

"Vá com ele, Akut", disse Tarzan dos Macacos. "Vou vir te ver amanhã."

Original English

The trainer stepped forward. The ape bared his fangs, growling.

"Go with him, Akut," said Tarzan of the Apes. "I will come and see you tomorrow."

Original Português

O treinador deu um passo à frente. O macaco mostrou as presas, rosnando.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Original Português

- Vá com ele, Akut - disse Tarzan dos Macacos. - Irei vê-lo amanhã.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

A fera foi devagar e com raiva até o lado do treinador. A pedido de John Clayton, o treinador disse onde poderiam encontrá-lo. Tarzan se virou para o filho.

Original English

The beast moved sullenly to the trainer's side. The latter, at John Clayton's request, told where they might be found. Tarzan turned toward his son.

Original Português

A fera moveu-se soturnamente para o lado do treinador. Este, a pedido de John Clayton, disse onde poderiam ser encontrados. Tarzan voltou-se para o filho.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Venha!", disse, e os dois saíram do teatro. Depois de entrarem na limusine, nenhum dos dois falou por vários minutos. Por fim o menino quebrou o silêncio.

Original English

"Come!" he said, and the two left the theater. Neither spoke for several minutes after they had entered the limousine. It was the boy who broke the silence.

Original Português

- Venha! - disse, e os dois deixaram o teatro. Nenhum deles falou por vários minutos depois de entrarem na limusine. Foi o menino quem rompeu o silêncio.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"O macaco conhecia você", disse, "e vocês falaram um com o outro na língua dos macacos. Como ele te conhecia, e como você aprendeu a língua dele?"

Original English

"The ape knew you," he said, "and you spoke together in the ape's tongue. How did the ape know you, and how did you learn his language?"

Original Português

- O macaco conhecia o senhor - disse - e vocês falaram juntos na língua dos macacos. Como o macaco o conhecia, e como o senhor aprendeu a língua dele?

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Então, pela primeira vez, Tarzan dos Macacos contou ao filho sobre sua vida inicial. Falou rapidamente sobre nascer na selva, perder os pais, e ser criado por Kala, a grande macaca. Também contou sobre os perigos da selva, os animais selvagens, secas longas, chuvas fortes, fome, frio, calor, medo e dor. Esperava que essas histórias fizessem o menino não gostar da selva. Mas eram exatamente essas coisas que Tarzan amava e lembrava melhor. Enquanto falava, esqueceu de uma coisa importante: o menino ao seu lado, ouvindo atentamente, era filho de Tarzan dos Macacos.

Original English

And then, briefly and for the first time, Tarzan of the Apes told his son of his early life -- of the birth in the jungle, of the death of his parents, and of how Kala, the great she ape had suckled and raised him from infancy almost to manhood. He told him, too, of the dangers and the horrors of the jungle; of the great beasts that stalked one by day and by night; of the periods of drought, and of the cataclysmic rains; of hunger; of cold; of intense heat; of nakedness and fear and suffering. He told him of all those things that seem most horrible to the creature of civilization in the hope that the knowledge of them might expunge from the lad's mind any inherent desire for the jungle. Yet they were the very things that made the memory of the jungle what it was to Tarzan -- that made up the composite jungle life he loved. And in the telling he forgot one thing -- the principal thing -- that the boy at his side, listening with eager ears, was the son of Tarzan of the Apes.

Original Português

E então, brevemente e pela primeira vez, Tarzan dos Macacos contou ao filho sua vida inicial - o nascimento na selva, a morte dos pais e como Kala, a grande macaca, o amamentara e criara desde a infância quase até a idade adulta. Contou-lhe também os perigos e horrores da selva; as grandes feras que espreitam o homem de dia e de noite; os períodos de seca e as chuvas cataclísmicas; a fome; o frio; o calor intenso; a nudez, o medo e o sofrimento. Contou-lhe todas aquelas coisas que parecem mais horríveis à criatura da civilização, na esperança de que o conhecimento delas extirpasse da mente do rapaz qualquer desejo inato pela selva. Contudo, eram exatamente essas coisas que faziam da memória da selva aquilo que ela era para Tarzan - que compunham a vida selvagem composta que ele amava. E ao contar esqueceu uma coisa - a coisa principal - que o menino a seu lado, ouvindo com ouvidos ávidos, era filho de Tarzan dos Macacos.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Depois que o menino foi para a cama, sem nenhum castigo, John Clayton contou à esposa sobre a noite. Disse que finalmente tinha contado ao menino a verdade sobre sua vida na selva. Sua esposa já esperava há muito tempo que o filho um dia soubesse daqueles anos terríveis em que o pai tinha vivido na selva como uma fera selvagem. Ela só balançou a cabeça, ainda esperando que o forte desejo pela selva no pai não tivesse passado para o filho.

Original English

After the boy had been tucked away in bed -- and without the threatened punishment -- John Clayton told his wife of the events of the evening, and that he had at last acquainted the boy with the facts of his jungle life. The mother, who had long foreseen that her son must some time know of those frightful years during which his father had roamed the jungle, a naked, savage beast of prey, only shook her head, hoping against hope that the lure she knew was still strong in the father's breast had not been transmitted to his son.

Original Português

Depois que o menino foi acomodado na cama - e sem o castigo prometido - John Clayton contou à esposa os acontecimentos da noite e que, afinal, familiarizara o menino com os fatos de sua vida na selva. A mãe, que há muito previra que o filho algum dia teria de saber daqueles anos terríveis durante os quais seu pai vagara pela selva, uma fera de presa nua e selvagem, apenas balançou a cabeça, esperando contra toda esperança que o encanto que sabia ainda forte no peito do pai não tivesse sido transmitido ao filho.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Tarzan visitou Akut no dia seguinte, mas Jack não teve permissão para ir junto, mesmo implorando. Dessa vez Tarzan viu o velho dono do macaco, marcado de varíola, mas não o reconheceu como o esperto Paulvitch de antes. Porque Akut pediu, Tarzan trouxe a ideia de comprar o macaco. Mas Paulvitch não quis dizer um preço. Disse que pensaria sobre isso.

Original English

Tarzan visited Akut the following day, but though Jack begged to be allowed to accompany him he was refused. This time Tarzan saw the pock-marked old owner of the ape, whom he did not recognize as the wily Paulvitch of former days. Tarzan, influenced by Akut's pleadings, broached the question of the ape's purchase; but Paulvitch would not name any price, saying that he would consider the matter.

Original Português

Tarzan visitou Akut no dia seguinte, mas, embora Jack implorasse permissão para acompanhá-lo, ela foi recusada. Dessa vez Tarzan viu o velho dono do macaco, marcado de bexigas, a quem não reconheceu como o astuto Paulvitch de outros tempos. Tarzan, influenciado pelos apelos de Akut, abordou a questão da compra do macaco; mas Paulvitch não quis mencionar preço algum, dizendo que consideraria o assunto.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Quando Tarzan voltou para casa, Jack estava ansioso para ouvir sobre a visita. Por fim sugeriu que o pai comprasse o macaco e o trouxesse para casa. Lady Greystoke ficou chocada com a ideia, mas o menino não desistiu. Tarzan disse que queria comprar Akut e mandá-lo de volta para sua casa na selva, e a mãe concordou. Jack pediu para visitar o macaco, mas ela recusou de novo. Ele tinha o endereço que o treinador dera ao pai, e dois dias depois escapou de seu novo tutor, que tinha tomado o lugar do senhor Moore. Depois de uma longa busca numa parte de Londres que nunca tinha visto, encontrou os cômodos sujos e pequenos do velho de rosto marcado de varíola. O homem atendeu à porta ele mesmo. Quando Jack disse que tinha vindo ver o Ajax, ele abriu a porta e o deixou entrar no quatinho que dividia com o grande macaco. No passado, Paulvitch tinha sido um homem mau e cuidadoso, mas dez anos de vida terrível entre canibais na África tinham tirado dele qualquer vestígio de limpeza. Suas roupas estavam amassadas e sujas. Suas mãos estavam por lavar, e os poucos fios finos de cabelo não estavam penteados. Seu quarto era uma bagunça de imundície. Quando o menino entrou, viu o grande macaco agachado na cama, onde os cobertores estavam emaranhados e cheiravam mal. Quando o macaco viu o menino, pulou para o chão e foi até ele. O homem não conhecia Jack e temeu que o macaco quisesse fazer mal, então se colocou entre eles e mandou o macaco voltar para a cama.

Original English

When Tarzan returned home Jack was all excitement to hear the details of his visit, and finally suggested that his father buy the ape and bring it home. Lady Greystoke was horrified at the suggestion. The boy was insistent. Tarzan explained that he had wished to purchase Akut and return him to his jungle home, and to this the mother assented. Jack asked to be allowed to visit the ape, but again he was met with flat refusal. He had the address, however, which the trainer had given his father, and two days later he found the opportunity to elude his new tutor -- who had replaced the terrified Mr. Moore -- and after a considerable search through a section of London which he had never before visited, he found the smelly little quarters of the pock-marked old man. The old fellow himself replied to his knocking, and when he stated that he had come to see Ajax, opened the door and admitted him to the little room which he and the great ape occupied. In former years Paulvitch had been a fastidious scoundrel; but ten years of hideous life among the cannibals of Africa had eradicated the last vestige of niceness from his habits. His apparel was wrinkled and soiled. His hands were unwashed, his few straggling locks uncombed. His

room was a jumble of filthy disorder. As the boy entered he saw the great ape squatting upon the bed, the coverlets of which were a tangled wad of filthy blankets and ill-smelling quilts. At sight of the youth the ape leaped to the floor and shuffled forward. The man, not recognizing his visitor and fearing that the ape meant mischief, stepped between them, ordering the ape back to the bed.

Original Português

Quando Tarzan voltou para casa, Jack estava todo excitado para ouvir os detalhes da visita, e por fim sugeriu que o pai comprasse o macaco e o trouxesse para casa. Lady Greystoke ficou horrorizada com a sugestão. O menino insistia. Tarzan explicou que desejava comprar Akut e devolvê-lo ao seu lar na selva, e a isso a mãe assentiu. Jack pediu permissão para visitar o macaco, mas novamente recebeu uma recusa categórica. Tinha, porém, o endereço que o treinador dera ao pai, e dois dias depois encontrou oportunidade de escapar de seu novo tutor - que substituíra o apavorado senhor Moore - e, após uma busca considerável por uma região de Londres que nunca visitara antes, encontrou os pequenos aposentos malcheirosos do velho mercado de bexigas. O próprio velho respondeu à sua batida e, quando ele declarou que viera ver Ajax, abriu a porta e o admitiu no pequeno quarto que ele e o grande macaco ocupavam. Em anos anteriores, Paulvitch fora um canalha meticoloso; mas dez anos de vida hedionda entre os canibais da África haviam erradicado de seus hábitos o último vestígio de asseio. Suas roupas estavam amarrotadas e sujas. Suas mãos, por lavar; seus poucos fios ralos, por pentear. Seu quarto era uma confusão de desordem imunda. Ao entrar, o menino viu o grande macaco agachado sobre a cama, cujas cobertas formavam um amontoado de mantas sujas e colchas fétidas. Ao ver o jovem, o macaco saltou ao chão e avançou arrastando-se. O homem, não reconhecendo o visitante e temendo que o macaco pretendesse fazer mal, interpôs-se entre eles, ordenando ao animal que voltasse à cama.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Ele não vai me machucar", gritou o menino. "Somos amigos, e antes ele era amigo do meu pai. Eles se conheceram na selva. Meu pai é Lord Greystoke. Ele não sabe que vim aqui. Minha mãe me proibiu de vir, mas eu queria ver o Ajax, e vou pagar ao senhor se me deixar vir sempre vê-lo."

Original English

"He will not hurt me," cried the boy. "We are friends, and before, he was my father's friend. They knew one another in the jungle. My father is Lord Greystoke. He does not know that I have come here. My mother forbid my coming; but I wished to see Ajax, and I will pay you if you will let me come here often and see him."

Original Português

- Ele não me fará mal - gritou o menino. - Somos amigos, e antes ele foi amigo de meu pai. Eles se conheceram na selva. Meu pai é Lord Greystoke. Ele não sabe que vim aqui. Minha mãe proibiu que eu viesse; mas eu queria ver Ajax, e pagarei ao senhor se me deixar vir aqui muitas vezes para vê-lo.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Quando Paulvitch ouviu quem era o menino, seus olhos se estreitaram. Desde que tinha visto Tarzan de novo no teatro, um desejo de vingança começara a crescer em sua mente. Pessoas fracas e criminosas costumam culpar os outros por seus próprios problemas. Então agora, Alexis Paulvitch se lembrava do seu passado. Achava que todas as coisas ruins que aconteceram com ele eram culpa de Tarzan. Ele e Rokoff tinham tentado arruinar e matar Tarzan, mas os planos falharam.

Original English

At the mention of the boy's identity Paulvitch's eyes narrowed. Since he had first seen Tarzan again from the wings of the theater there had been forming in his deadened brain the beginnings of a desire for revenge. It is a characteristic of the weak and criminal to attribute to others the misfortunes that are the result of their own wickedness, and so now it was that Alexis Paulvitch was slowly recalling the events of his past life and as he did so laying at the door of the man whom he and Rokoff had so assiduously attempted to ruin and murder all the misfortunes that had befallen him in the failure of their various schemes against their intended victim.

Original Português

À menção da identidade do menino, os olhos de Paulvitch se estreitaram. Desde que tornara a ver Tarzan dos bastidores do teatro, formava-se em seu cérebro embotado o início de um desejo de vingança. É característica dos fracos e criminosos atribuir aos outros os infortúnios que são resultado de sua própria perversidade; e assim agora Alexis Paulvitch recordava lentamente os acontecimentos de sua vida passada e, ao fazê-lo, punha à porta do homem que ele e Rokoff tão assiduamente haviam tentado arruinar e matar todos os infortúnios que lhe sobrevieram no fracasso de seus vários planos contra a vítima pretendida.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

No começo, ele não via um jeito seguro de machucar Tarzan através do filho de Tarzan. Mas via que o menino podia ser útil para a vingança, então decidiu ser gentil com ele e esperar uma chance mais tarde. Contou ao menino tudo que sabia sobre a vida do pai na selva. Depois soube que o menino tinha sido mantido longe dessas histórias por muitos anos e proibido de visitar o jardim zoológico. Também soube que o menino tinha amarrado e amordaçado o tutor para escapar e ir ao music hall ver o Ajax. Então adivinhou o grande medo dos pais: que o menino pudesse desejar a selva, assim como o pai tinha desejado.

Original English

He saw at first no way in which he could, with safety to himself, wreak vengeance upon Tarzan through the medium of Tarzan's son; but that great possibilities for revenge lay in the boy was apparent to him, and so he determined to cultivate the lad in the hope that fate would play into his hands in some way in the future. He told the boy all that he knew of his father's past life in the jungle and when he found that the boy had been kept in ignorance of all these things for so many years, and that he had been forbidden visiting the zoological gardens; that he had had to bind and gag his tutor to find an opportunity to come to the music hall and see Ajax, he guessed immediately the nature of the great fear that lay in the hearts of the boy's parents -- that he might crave the jungle as his father had craved it.

Original Português

A princípio não via modo pelo qual pudesse, com segurança para si, vingar-se de Tarzan por intermédio do filho de Tarzan; mas era evidente para ele que grandes possibilidades de vingança residiam no menino, e assim decidiu cultivar o rapaz na esperança de que, no futuro, o destino lhe pusesse algo nas mãos. Contou ao menino tudo o que sabia da vida passada de seu pai na selva e, quando descobriu que o menino fora mantido na ignorância de todas essas coisas por tantos anos, e que lhe haviam proibido visitar os jardins zoológicos; que tivera de amarrar e amordaçar seu tutor para encontrar uma oportunidade de ir ao music hall e ver Ajax, adivinhou imediatamente a natureza do grande temor que jazia no coração dos pais do menino - que ele pudesse desejar a selva como seu pai a desejara.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Então Paulvitch incentivou o menino a visitá-lo com frequência. Sempre alimentava a fome do menino por histórias sobre o mundo selvagem que conhecia tão bem. Também o deixava muito sozinho com o Akut, e logo ficou surpreso ao saber que o menino conseguia fazer a grande fera entendê-lo. O menino realmente tinha aprendido muitas palavras da língua simples do povo macaco.

Original English

And so Paulvitch encouraged the boy to come and see him often, and always he played upon the lad's craving for tales of the savage world with which Paulvitch was all too familiar. He left him alone with Akut much, and it was not long until he was surprised to learn that the boy could make the great beast understand him -- that he had actually learned many of the words of the primitive language of the anthropoids.

Original Português

E assim Paulvitch incentivou o menino a vir vê-lo com frequência, e sempre tocava no anseio do rapaz por histórias do mundo selvagem que Paulvitch conhecia demasiado bem. Deixava-o muito a sós com Akut, e não demorou até ficar surpreso ao saber que o menino conseguia fazer a grande fera compreendê-lo - que aprendera de fato muitas palavras da língua primitiva dos antropoides.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Durante esse tempo Tarzan visitou Paulvitch várias vezes. Parecia ansioso para comprar o Ajax. Por fim disse abertamente ao homem que queria mandar a fera de volta para a liberdade em sua casa na selva. Também disse que sua esposa temia que o filho descobrisse onde o macaco estava e, por amar a fera, desenvolvesse o espírito errante que tinha moldado a própria vida de Tarzan.

Original English

During this period Tarzan came several times to visit Paulvitch. He seemed anxious to purchase Ajax, and at last he told the man frankly that he was prompted not only by a desire upon his part to return the beast to the liberty of his native jungle; but also because his wife feared that in some way her son might learn the whereabouts of the ape and through his attachment for the beast become imbued with the roving instinct which, as Tarzan explained to Paulvitch, had so influenced his own life.

Original Português

Durante esse período Tarzan veio várias vezes visitar Paulvitch. Parecia ansioso por comprar Ajax e por fim disse ao homem francamente que era movido não apenas pelo desejo de devolver a fera à liberdade de sua selva natal, mas também porque sua esposa temia que, de algum modo, seu filho pudesse descobrir o paradeiro do macaco e, por seu apego à fera, ser impregnado pelo instinto errante que, como Tarzan explicou a Paulvitch, tanto influenciara sua própria vida.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O russo quase sorriu ouvindo Lord Greystoke. Só meia hora antes, o futuro Lord Greystoke estava sentado na cama bagunçada, conversando com o Ajax com tanta facilidade quanto se fosse um macaco de nascença.

Original English

The Russian could scarce repress a smile as he listened to Lord Greystoke's words, since scarce a half hour had passed since the time the future Lord Greystoke had been sitting upon the disordered bed jabbering away to Ajax with all the fluency of a born ape.

Original Português

O russo mal pôde reprimir um sorriso enquanto ouvia as palavras de Lord Greystoke, pois mal se passara meia hora desde que o futuro Lord Greystoke estivera sentado sobre a cama desarrumada, tagarelando com Ajax com toda a fluência de um macaco nato.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Durante essa conversa, Paulvitch teve uma ideia. Concordou em aceitar uma soma enorme pelo macaco e entregá-lo dois dias depois a um navio que partia de Dover para a África. Tinha dois motivos para concordar. Primeiro, o dinheiro era muito importante para ele, porque o macaco não lhe rendia mais nada. O Ajax tinha parado de se apresentar no palco depois de encontrar Tarzan. Era como se a fera tivesse sido trazida da selva e mostrada a milhares de pessoas só para encontrar seu velho amigo e mestre. Depois disso, parecia achar que não havia mais motivo para se misturar com seres humanos. Nenhuma persuasão conseguia fazê-lo subir no palco de novo, e quando o treinador uma vez tentou a força, teve sorte de escapar vivo. Jack Clayton o salvou. Jack tinha permissão para visitar o animal no camarim do music hall, e interveio na hora ao ver que a fera selvagem representava perigo real.

Original English

It was during this interview that a plan occurred to Paulvitch, and as a result of it he agreed to accept a certain fabulous sum for the ape, and upon receipt of the money to deliver the beast to a vessel that was sailing south from Dover for Africa two days later. He had a double purpose in accepting Clayton's offer. Primarily, the money consideration influenced him strongly, as the ape was no longer a source of revenue to him, having consistently refused to perform upon the stage after having discovered Tarzan. It was as though the beast had suffered himself to be brought from his jungle home and exhibited before thousands of curious spectators for the sole purpose of searching out his long lost friend and master, and, having found him, considered further mingling with the common herd of humans unnecessary. However that may be, the fact remained that no amount of persuasion could influence him even to show himself upon the music hall stage, and upon the single occasion that the trainer attempted force the results were such that the unfortunate man considered himself lucky to have escaped with his life. All that saved him was the accidental presence of Jack Clayton, who had been permitted to visit the animal in the dressing room reserved for him at the music hall, and had immediately interfered when he saw that the savage beast meant serious mischief.

Original Português

Foi durante essa entrevista que um plano ocorreu a Paulvitch, e, como resultado, ele concordou em aceitar certa soma fabulosa pelo macaco e, ao receber o dinheiro, entregar a fera a um navio que partiria de Dover rumo ao sul, para a África, dois dias depois. Tinha duplo propósito ao aceitar a oferta de Clayton. Em primeiro lugar, a consideração financeira o

influenciava fortemente, pois o macaco já não era fonte de receita para ele, tendo-se recusado consistentemente a apresentar-se no palco depois de descobrir Tarzan. Era como se a fera tivesse permitido ser trazida de seu lar na selva e exibida diante de milhares de espectadores curiosos com o único propósito de encontrar seu amigo e mestre há muito perdido, e, depois de encontrá-lo, julgasse desnecessário continuar misturando-se ao rebanho comum dos humanos. Seja como for, permanecia o fato de que nenhuma persuasão podia induzi-la sequer a mostrar-se no palco do music hall, e na única ocasião em que o treinador tentou a força, os resultados foram tais que o infeliz se considerou afortunado por escapar com vida. O que o salvou foi a presença accidental de Jack Clayton, que recebera permissão para visitar o animal no camarim reservado para ele no music hall, e imediatamente interferiu ao ver que a fera selvagem pretendia causar sério dano.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Além do dinheiro, o russo também queria vingança. Tinha ficado mais amargo pensando nos fracassos e misérias de sua vida, e culpava Tarzan por eles. A perda mais recente, e não a menor, era a recusa do Ajax em continuar rendendo dinheiro para ele. Culpava Tarzan diretamente por essa recusa e por fim se convenceu de que o homem-macaco tinha dito ao grande macaco para não subir no palco.

Original English

And after the money consideration, strong in the heart of the Russian was the desire for revenge, which had been growing with constant brooding over the failures and miseries of his life, which he attributed to Tarzan; the latest, and by no means the least, of which was Ajax's refusal to longer earn money for him. The ape's refusal he traced directly to Tarzan, finally convincing himself that the ape man had instructed the great anthropoid to refuse to go upon the stage.

Original Português

E, depois da consideração financeira, forte no coração do russo estava o desejo de vingança, que crescera com a constante ruminação sobre os fracassos e misérias de sua vida, que ele atribuía a Tarzan; o mais recente, e de modo algum o menor, era a recusa de Ajax em continuar ganhando dinheiro para ele. A recusa do macaco ele atribuía diretamente a Tarzan, convencendo-se por fim de que o homem-macaco instruíra o grande antropeide a recusar-se a subir ao palco.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Paulvitch era naturalmente cruel, e a tortura e a fome tinham deixado sua mente e corpo mais fracos e retorcidos. Tinha mudado de um homem mau frio, esperto e muito inteligente para uma ameaça perigosa com a mente confusa de uma pessoa quebrada. Mesmo assim, seu plano ainda era esperto o bastante para fazer as pessoas duvidarem se ele estava realmente louco. Primeiro, garantiria que ele recebesse o pagamento que Lord Greystoke tinha prometido por levar o macaco embora. Depois lhe daria vingança através do filho que ele tanto amava. Essa parte do plano era grosseira e brutal. Não tinha a crueldade cuidadosa dos velhos tempos, quando ele trabalhava com Nikolas Rokoff. Mas manteria Paulvitch livre de culpa, porque a culpa pareceria ser do macaco, que também seria punido por se recusar a sustentar mais o russo.

Original English

Paulvitch's naturally malign disposition was aggravated by the weakening and warping of his mental and physical faculties through torture and privation. From cold, calculating, highly intelligent perversity it had deteriorated into the indiscriminating, dangerous menace of the mentally defective. His plan, however, was sufficiently cunning to at least cast a doubt upon the assertion that his mentality was wandering. It assured him first of the competence which Lord Greystoke had promised to pay him for the deportation of the ape, and then of revenge upon his benefactor through the son he idolized. That part of his scheme was crude and brutal -- it lacked the refinement of torture that had marked the master strokes of the Paulvitch of old, when he had worked with that virtuoso of villainy, Nikolas Rokoff -- but it at least assured Paulvitch of immunity from responsibility, placing that upon the ape, who would thus also be punished for his refusal longer to support the Russian.

Original Português

A disposição naturalmente maligna de Paulvitch fora agravada pelo enfraquecimento e pela deformação de suas faculdades mentais e físicas por tormentos e privações. Da perversidade fria, calculista e altamente inteligente, ela se deteriorara em ameaça indiscriminada e perigosa de uma mente defeituosa. Seu plano, contudo, era suficientemente astuto para ao menos lançar dúvida sobre a afirmação de que sua mentalidade vagava. Garantia-lhe primeiro a competência que Lord Greystoke prometera pagar pela deportação do macaco, e depois a vingança contra seu benfeitor por meio do filho que idolatrava. Essa parte de seu esquema era rude e brutal - faltava-lhe o refinamento do tormento que marcara os golpes de mestre do Paulvitch de outrora, quando trabalhara com aquele

virtuose da vilania, Nikolas Rokoff - , mas ao menos assegurava a Paulvitch imunidade de responsabilidade, colocando-a sobre o macaco, que assim também seria punido por sua recusa em continuar sustentando o russo.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Tudo parecia trabalhar a favor de Paulvitch. Por acaso, o filho de Tarzan ouviu o pai contar à mãe do menino como planejava mandar o Akut de volta em segurança para sua casa na selva. Depois de ouvir isso, Jack implorou para trazerem o macaco para casa para que pudesse tê-lo como companheiro de brincadeiras. Tarzan não se importaria, mas Lady Greystoke ficou chocada com a ideia. Jack implorou à mãe, mas não adiantou nada. Ela não mudou de ideia. No fim, Jack pareceu aceitar a decisão dela de que o macaco devia ser mandado de volta para a África e o menino devia voltar para a escola depois das férias.

Original English

Everything played with fiendish unanimity into Paulvitch's hands. As chance would have it, Tarzan's son overheard his father relating to the boy's mother the steps he was taking to return Akut safely to his jungle home, and having overheard he begged them to bring the ape home that he might have him for a play-fellow. Tarzan would not have been averse to this plan; but Lady Greystoke was horrified at the very thought of it. Jack pleaded with his mother; but all unavailingly. She was obdurate, and at last the lad appeared to acquiesce in his mother's decision that the ape must be returned to Africa and the boy to school, from which he had been absent on vacation.

Original Português

Tudo se arranjou com unanimidade diabólica nas mãos de Paulvitch. Como quis o acaso, o filho de Tarzan ouviu o pai relatar à mãe do menino as medidas que estava tomando para devolver Akut em segurança a seu lar na selva; e, tendo ouvido, implorou que trouxessem o macaco para casa para que pudesse tê-lo como companheiro de brincadeiras. Tarzan não teria sido contrário a esse plano; mas Lady Greystoke ficou horrorizada com a simples ideia. Jack suplicou à mãe; mas tudo foi inútil. Ela permaneceu inflexível, e por fim o rapaz pareceu aquiescer à decisão materna de que o macaco devia ser devolvido à África e o menino à escola, da qual estivera ausente em férias.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Ele não tentou visitar o quarto de Paulvitch de novo naquele dia. Em vez disso, se manteve ocupado de outras formas. Sempre recebeu bastante dinheiro, então quando precisou, não teve dificuldade em juntar várias centenas de libras. Gastou parte disso em coisas estranhas, que trouxe escondido para casa quando voltou tarde da tarde.

Original English

He did not attempt to visit Paulvitch's room again that day, but instead busied himself in other ways. He had always been well supplied with money, so that when necessity demanded he had no difficulty in collecting several hundred pounds. Some of this money he invested in various strange purchases which he managed to smuggle into the house, undetected, when he returned late in the afternoon.

Original Português

Ele não tentou visitar novamente o quarto de Paulvitch naquele dia, ocupando-se antes de outras maneiras. Sempre fora bem suprido de dinheiro, de modo que, quando a necessidade exigiu, não teve dificuldade em reunir várias centenas de libras. Parte desse dinheiro investiu em diversas compras estranhas, que conseguiu introduzir na casa, sem ser percebido, ao retornar no fim da tarde.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Na manhã seguinte, depois de dar tempo para o pai sair na frente e terminar seus negócios com Paulvitch, o menino se apressou até o quarto do russo. Não sabia a verdadeira natureza do homem, então não ousou contar tudo. Temia que o velho não só se recusasse a ajudar, mas contasse ao pai. Em vez disso, simplesmente pediu permissão para levar o Ajax até Dover. Disse que isso pouparia ao velho uma viagem cansativa e também colocaria várias libras no bolso dele, porque o menino pretendia pagar bem ao russo.

Original English

The next morning, after giving his father time to precede him and conclude his business with Paulvitch, the lad hastened to the Russian's room. Knowing nothing of the man's true character the boy dared not take him fully into his confidence for fear that the old fellow would not only refuse to aid him, but would report the whole affair to his father. Instead, he simply asked permission to take Ajax to Dover. He explained that it would relieve the old man of a tiresome journey, as well as placing a number of pounds in his pocket, for the lad purposed paying the Russian well.

Original Português

Na manhã seguinte, depois de dar ao pai tempo para precedê-lo e concluir seus negócios com Paulvitch, o rapaz apressou-se ao quarto do russo. Nada sabendo do verdadeiro caráter do homem, o menino não ousava tomá-lo plenamente em sua confiança, por medo de que o velho não apenas se recusasse a ajudá-lo, mas relatasse todo o assunto a seu pai. Em vez disso, simplesmente pediu permissão para levar Ajax a Dover. Explicou que isso pouparia ao velho uma viagem cansativa, além de pôr várias libras em seu bolso, pois o rapaz pretendia pagar bem ao russo.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Veja", continuou, "não vai haver perigo de descobrirem, porque supostamente eu vou pegar um trem à tarde para a escola. Em vez disso, vou vir aqui depois que me virem entrar no trem. Aí posso levar o Ajax até Dover e chegar à escola só um dia atrasado. Ninguém vai saber, nada de ruim vai acontecer, e eu vou ter um dia extra com o Ajax antes de perdê-lo para sempre."

Original English

"You see," he went on, "there will be no danger of detection since I am supposed to be leaving on an afternoon train for school. Instead I will come here after they have left me on board the train. Then I can take Ajax to Dover, you see, and arrive at school only a day late. No one will be the wiser, no harm will be done, and I shall have had an extra day with Ajax before I lose him forever."

Original Português

- Veja - prosseguiu - não haverá perigo de descoberta, já que se supõe que eu parta num trem da tarde para a escola. Em vez disso, virei aqui depois que me deixarem a bordo do trem. Então posso levar Ajax a Dover, entende, e chegar à escola apenas um dia atrasado. Ninguém saberá de nada, nenhum mal será feito, e eu terei tido um dia extra com Ajax antes de perdê-lo para sempre.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O plano se encaixava perfeitamente com o que Paulvitch tinha em mente. Se soubesse o que o menino estava planejando a seguir, provavelmente teria desistido do próprio plano de vingança e ajudado o menino de todo coração. Isso teria sido melhor para Paulvitch, se ao menos ele pudesse ver o futuro algumas horas à frente.

Original English

The plan fitted perfectly with that which Paulvitch had in mind. Had he known what further the boy contemplated he would doubtless have entirely abandoned his own scheme of revenge and aided the boy whole heartedly in the consummation of the lad's, which would have been better for Paulvitch, could he have but read the future but a few short hours ahead.

Original Português

O plano se ajustava perfeitamente ao que Paulvitch tinha em mente. Se soubesse o que mais o menino planejava, sem dúvida teria abandonado inteiramente seu próprio esquema de vingança e auxiliado o menino de todo coração na consumação do plano do rapaz, o que teria sido melhor para Paulvitch, se ao menos pudesse ter lido o futuro poucas horas adiante.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Naquela tarde, Lord e Lady Greystoke se despediram do filho e o viram sentado em segurança num vagão de primeira classe que o levaria à escola em algumas horas. Mas assim que o deixaram, ele pegou as malas, saiu do compartimento e foi até um ponto de táxi fora da estação. Ali contratou um táxi para levá-lo ao endereço do russo. Já era crepúsculo quando chegou. Paulvitch o esperava. O homem andava nervoso de um lado para outro. O macaco estava amarrado à cama com uma corda forte. Jack nunca tinha visto o Ajax preso assim antes. Olhou para Paulvitch com uma expressão de dúvida. O homem gaguejou que achava que o animal sabia que seria mandado embora e temia que o Ajax tentasse escapar.

Original English

That afternoon Lord and Lady Greystoke bid their son good-bye and saw him safely settled in a first-class compartment of the railway carriage that would set him down at school in a few hours. No sooner had they left him, however, than he gathered his bags together, descended from the compartment and sought a cab stand outside the station. Here he engaged a cabby to take him to the Russian's address. It was dusk when he arrived. He found Paulvitch awaiting him. The man was pacing the floor nervously. The ape was tied with a stout cord to the bed. It was the first time that Jack had ever seen Ajax thus secured. He looked questioningly at Paulvitch. The man, mumbling, explained that he believed the animal had guessed that he was to be sent away and he feared he would attempt to escape.

Original Português

Naquela tarde, Lord e Lady Greystoke despediram-se do filho e o viram instalado em segurança num compartimento de primeira classe do vagão ferroviário que o deixaria na escola em poucas horas. Assim que o deixaram, porém, ele reuniu suas malas, desceu do compartimento e procurou um ponto de táxis fora da estação. Ali contratou um cocheiro para levá-lo ao endereço do russo. Era crepúsculo quando chegou. Encontrou Paulvitch à sua espera. O homem andava nervosamente pelo quarto. O macaco estava amarrado à cama por uma corda forte. Era a primeira vez que Jack via Ajax preso dessa maneira. Olhou interrogativamente para Paulvitch. O homem, resmungando, explicou que acreditava que o animal adivinhara que seria mandado embora e temia que tentasse escapar.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Paulvitch segurava outro pedaço de corda na mão. Tinha um laço numa ponta, e ele ficava mexendo nela. Andava de um lado para outro no quarto. Seu rosto marcado de varíola se mexia estranhamente enquanto falava sozinho em silêncio. O menino nunca o tinha visto assim, e isso o deixou desconfortável. Por fim Paulvitch parou do outro lado do quarto, longe do macaco.

Original English

Paulvitch carried another piece of cord in his hand. There was a noose in one end of it which he was continually playing with. He walked back and forth, up and down the room. His pock-marked features were working horribly as he talked silent to himself. The boy had never seen him thus -- it made him uneasy. At last Paulvitch stopped on the opposite side of the room, far from the ape.

Original Português

Paulvitch trazia outro pedaço de corda na mão. Havia um laço numa das extremidades, com o qual brincava continuamente. Andava de um lado para outro, para cima e para baixo no quarto. Suas feições marcadas de bexigas trabalhavam horivelmente enquanto ele falava consigo mesmo em silêncio. O menino nunca o vira assim - aquilo o inquietou. Por fim Paulvitch parou do outro lado do quarto, longe do macaco.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Venha aqui", disse ao menino. "Vou te mostrar como amarrar o macaco se ele mostrar sinais de rebeldia durante a viagem."

Original English

"Come here," he said to the lad. "I will show you how to secure the ape should he show signs of rebellion during the trip."

Original Português

- Venha aqui - disse ao rapaz. - Vou lhe mostrar como prender o macaco caso ele dê sinais de rebelião durante a viagem.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O menino riu. "Não vai ser necessário", disse. "O Ajax vai fazer tudo que eu mandar."

Original English

The lad laughed. "It will not be necessary," he replied. "Ajax will do whatever I tell him to do."

Original Português

O rapaz riu. "Não será necessário", respondeu. "Ajax fará tudo o que eu lhe disser."

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O velho bateu o pé com raiva. "Venha aqui, como estou mandando", repetiu. "Se não me obedecer, não vai junto com o macaco para Dover. Não vou correr o risco de ele escapar."

Original English

The old man stamped his foot angrily. "Come here, as I tell you," he repeated. "If you do not do as I say you shall not accompany the ape to Dover -- I will take no chances upon his escaping."

Original Português

O velho bateu o pé com raiva. "Venha aqui, como estou mandando", repetiu. "Se não fizer o que digo, não acompanhará o macaco a Dover - não correrei o risco de que ele escape."

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Ainda sorrindo, o menino atravessou o quarto e ficou de pé na frente do russo.

Original English

Still smiling, the lad crossed the room and stood before the Russ.

Original Português

Ainda sorrindo, o rapaz atravessou o quarto e ficou diante do russo.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Vire-se, de costas para mim", disse o outro homem. "Aí posso te mostrar como amarrá-lo rápido."

Original English

"Turn around, with your back toward me," directed the latter, "that I may show you how to bind him quickly."

Original Português

- Vire-se, de costas para mim - orientou este - para que eu lhe mostre como amarrá-lo depressa.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O menino obedeceu e colocou as mãos atrás das costas quando Paulvitch mandou. Na hora o velho passou um laço num pulso, deu duas voltas no outro pulso e amarrou a corda.

Original English

The boy did as he was bid, placing his hands behind him when Paulvitch told him to do so. Instantly the old man slipped the running noose over one of the lad's wrists, took a couple of half hitches about his other wrist, and knotted the cord.

Original Português

O menino fez como lhe foi pedido, pondo as mãos atrás de si quando Paulvitch mandou. Instantaneamente o velho passou o laço corrediço por um dos pulsos do rapaz, deu duas voltas pelo outro pulso e amarrou a corda.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Assim que o menino ficou amarrado, o comportamento do homem mudou. Xingou com raiva, virou o prisioneiro, o derrubou e o jogou com força no chão. Pulou no peito do menino quando ele caiu. Da cama, o macaco rosnou e lutou contra as cordas. O menino não gritou, porque tinha aprendido com seu pai selvagem que ninguém viria ajudar quem tinha caído.

Original English

The moment that the boy was secured the attitude of the man changed. With an angry oath he wheeled his prisoner about, tripped him and hurled him violently to the floor, leaping upon his breast as he fell. From the bed the ape growled and struggled with his bonds. The boy did not cry out -- a trait inherited from his savage sire whom long years in the jungle following the death of his foster mother, Kala the great ape, had taught that there was none to come to the succor of the fallen.

Original Português

No momento em que o menino foi preso, a atitude do homem mudou. Com uma praga furiosa, girou o prisioneiro, derrubou-o e arremessou-o violentamente ao chão, saltando-lhe sobre o peito quando caiu. Da cama, o macaco rosnou e lutou contra suas amarras. O menino não gritou - traço herdado de seu pai selvagem, a quem longos anos na selva após a morte de sua mãe adotiva, Kala, a grande macaca, haviam ensinado que não havia ninguém para socorrer os caídos.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Os dedos de Paulvitch foram até a garganta do menino. Ele olhou para a vítima com um sorriso horrível.

Original English

Paulvitch's fingers sought the lad's throat. He grinned down horribly into the face of his victim.

Original Português

Os dedos de Paulvitch procuraram a garganta do rapaz. Ele sorriu horrivelmente para o rosto de sua vítima.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Seu pai me arruinou", murmurou. "Isto vai pagar por isso. Ele vai achar que foi o macaco. Vou dizer que foi o macaco. Que o deixei sozinho por alguns minutos, e você entrou escondido, e o macaco te matou. Depois de te sufocar até a morte, vou jogar seu corpo na cama. Quando eu trazer seu pai aqui, ele vai ver o macaco sentado em cima", e o vilão retorcido riu de prazer. Seus dedos se fecharam na garganta do menino.

Original English

"Your father ruined me," he mumbled. "This will pay him. He will think that the ape did it. I will tell him that the ape did it. That I left him alone for a few minutes, and that you sneaked in and the ape killed you. I will throw your body upon the bed after I have choked the life from you, and when I bring your father he will see the ape squatting over it," and the twisted fiend cackled in gloating laughter. His fingers closed upon the boy's throat.

Original Português

- Seu pai me arruinou - murmurou. - Isto o pagará. Ele pensará que foi o macaco. Direi que foi o macaco. Que o deixei sozinho por alguns minutos, e que você entrou às escondidas e o macaco o matou. Atirarei seu corpo sobre a cama depois de acabar com você, e quando eu trazer seu pai ele verá o macaco agachado sobre ele - e o demônio torcido cacarejou em riso de triunfo. Seus dedos fecharam-se na garganta do menino.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Atrás deles, a fera furiosa rosnava tão alto que o som ecoava pelo quartinho. O menino ficou pálido, mas não mostrou mais nenhum sinal de medo. Era o filho de Tarzan. Os dedos apertaram sua garganta, e ele mal conseguia respirar. O macaco se jogou contra a corda forte que o prendia. Depois se virou, enrolou a corda nas mãos como um homem faria, e puxou com força para trás. Seus músculos grandes se destacaram sob a pele peluda. Houve um som como madeira quebrando. A corda aguentou, mas parte da tábua do pé da cama se soltou.

Original English

Behind them the growling of the maddened beast reverberated against the walls of the little room. The boy paled, but no other sign of fear or panic showed upon his countenance. He was the son of Tarzan. The fingers tightened their grip upon his throat. It was with difficulty that he breathed, gaspingly. The ape lunged against the stout cord that held him. Turning, he wrapped the cord about his hands, as a man might have done, and surged heavily backward. The great muscles stood out beneath his shaggy hide. There was a rending as of splintered wood -- the cord held, but a portion of the footboard of the bed came away.

Original Português

Atrás deles, o rosnado da fera enlouquecida reverberava contra as paredes do pequeno quarto. O menino empalideceu, mas nenhum outro sinal de medo ou pânico apareceu em seu semblante. Era o filho de Tarzan. Os dedos apertaram sua garganta. Ele respirava com dificuldade, em arquejos. O macaco investiu contra a corda forte que o prendia. Virando-se, enrolou a corda nas mãos, como um homem poderia ter feito, e puxou-se pesadamente para trás. Os grandes músculos sobressaíram sob sua pele peluda. Ouviu-se um som como madeira estilhaçando - a corda resistiu, mas uma parte da cabeceira inferior da cama se arrancou.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Ao som, Paulvitch ergueu os olhos. Seu rosto feio ficou branco de medo. O macaco estava solto.

Original English

At the sound Paulvitch looked up. His hideous face went white with terror -- the ape was free.

Original Português

Ao som, Paulvitch ergueu os olhos. Seu rosto hediondo ficou branco de terror - o macaco estava livre.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Com um salto, a criatura estava sobre ele. O homem gritou. A fera o arrastou para longe do corpo do menino. Dedos enormes afundaram na carne do homem. Dentes amarelos se abriram perto da garganta dele. Ele lutou, mas foi inútil. Quando os dentes se fecharam, a alma de Alexis Paulvitch se foi.

Original English

With a single bound the creature was upon him. The man shrieked. The brute wrenched him from the body of the boy. Great fingers sunk into the man's flesh. Yellow fangs gaped close to his throat -- he struggled, futilely -- and when they closed, the soul of Alexis Paulvitch passed into the keeping of the demons who had long been awaiting it.

Original Português

Com um único salto, a criatura caiu sobre ele. O homem gritou. A fera arrancou-o de cima do corpo do menino. Grandes dedos afundaram-se na carne do homem. Presas amarelas se abriram junto a sua garganta - ele lutou, inutilmente - e quando se fecharam, a vida de Alexis Paulvitch passou ao domínio dos demônios que há muito a aguardavam.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O menino se levantou com a ajuda do Akut. Por duas horas, sob a direção do menino, o macaco trabalhou nos nós que prendiam os pulsos do amigo. Por fim os nós se soltaram, e o menino ficou livre. Depois abriu uma das malas e tirou algumas roupas. Tinha planejado com cuidado. Não pediu conselho à fera, mas o macaco fez tudo que ele mandou. Juntos escaparam da casa, e uma pessoa comum não teria notado que um deles era um macaco.

Original English

The boy struggled to his feet, assisted by Akut. For two hours under the instructions of the former the ape worked upon the knots that secured his friend's wrists. Finally they gave up their secret, and the boy was free. Then he opened one of his bags and drew forth some garments. His plans had been well made. He did not consult the beast, which did all that he directed. Together they slunk from the house, but no casual observer might have noted that one of them was an ape.

Original Português

O menino levantou-se com esforço, ajudado por Akut. Por duas horas, sob as instruções do rapaz, o macaco trabalhou nos nós que prendiam os pulsos do amigo. Finalmente eles cederam seu segredo, e o menino ficou livre. Então abriu uma de suas malas e retirou algumas roupas. Seus planos haviam sido bem feitos. Não consultou a fera, que fazia tudo o que ele mandava. Juntos esgueiraram-se para fora da casa, mas nenhum observador casual teria notado que um deles era um macaco.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Chapter 4

B1 Português (simplified)

A morte do velho russo solitário, Michael Sabrov, pelo seu macaco treinado saiu nos jornais por alguns dias. Lord Greystoke leu sobre isso e tomou cuidado para não deixar seu nome ligado ao caso. Também se manteve informado sobre a busca policial pelo macaco.

Original English

The killing of the friendless old Russian, Michael Sabrov, by his great trained ape, was a matter for newspaper comment for a few days. Lord Greystoke read of it, and while taking special precautions not to permit his name to become connected with the affair, kept himself well posted as to the police search for the anthropoid.

Original Português

A morte do velho russo sem amigos, Michael Sabrov, por seu grande macaco treinado, foi assunto de comentários nos jornais por alguns dias. Lord Greystoke leu a respeito e, embora tomasse precauções especiais para não permitir que seu nome fosse ligado ao caso, manteve-se bem informado sobre a busca policial pelo antropeide.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Como a maioria das pessoas, seu principal interesse era o desaparecimento misterioso do assassino. Mas depois, poucos dias depois, soube que seu filho Jack não tinha chegado à escola. Tinham o visto entrar no trem em segurança. O pai não achou que o desaparecimento do filho estivesse ligado ao macaco. Um mês depois, uma investigação cuidadosa mostrou que Jack tinha saído do trem antes de ele partir de Londres. Um taxista o tinha levado até o endereço do velho russo. Então Tarzan dos Macacos percebeu que o Akut estava ligado ao desaparecimento do menino.

Original English

As was true of the general public, his chief interest in the matter centered about the mysterious disappearance of the slayer. Or at least this was true until he learned, several days subsequent to the tragedy, that his son Jack had not reported at the public school en route for which they had seen him safely ensconced in a railway carriage. Even then the father did not connect the disappearance of his son with the mystery surrounding the whereabouts of the ape. Nor was it until a month later that careful investigation revealed the fact that the boy had left the train before it pulled out of the station at London, and the cab driver had been found who had driven him to the address of the old Russian, that Tarzan of the Apes realized that Akut had in some way been connected with the disappearance of the boy.

Original Português

Como acontecia com o público em geral, seu principal interesse no assunto concentrava-se no misterioso desaparecimento do matador. Ou ao menos assim foi até que soube, vários dias depois da tragédia, que seu filho Jack não se apresentara no colégio público a caminho do qual o haviam visto instalado com segurança num vagão ferroviário. Mesmo então o pai não relacionou o desaparecimento do filho ao mistério que cercava o paradeiro do macaco. Só um mês depois, quando uma investigação cuidadosa revelou que o menino deixara o trem antes de este sair da estação em Londres e que fora encontrado o cocheiro que o conduzira ao endereço do velho russo, Tarzan dos Macacos percebeu que Akut estivera de algum modo ligado ao desaparecimento do menino.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Depois que o taxista deixou o menino na calçada em frente à casa onde o russo morava, não havia mais nenhuma pista. Ninguém tinha visto o menino ou o macaco depois disso, pelo menos ninguém que ainda estivesse vivo. O dono da casa reconheceu a foto do menino como alguém que visitava com frequência o quarto do velho. Não sabia mais nada. Então os investigadores chegaram a um beco sem saída na porta de um prédio velho e sujo numa parte pobre de Londres.

Original English

Beyond the moment that the cab driver had deposited his fare beside the curb in front of the house in which the Russian had been quartered there was no clue. No one had seen either the boy or the ape from that instant -- at least no one who still lived. The proprietor of the house identified the picture of the lad as that of one who had been a frequent visitor in the room of the old man. Aside from this he knew nothing. And there, at the door of a grimy, old building in the slums of London, the searchers came to a blank wall -- baffled.

Original Português

Além do momento em que o cocheiro depositara seu passageiro junto à calçada diante da casa em que o russo se alojara, não havia pista. Ninguém vira o menino nem o macaco desde aquele instante - ao menos ninguém que ainda vivesse. O proprietário da casa identificou a fotografia do rapaz como a de alguém que fora visitante frequente do quarto do velho. Fora isso, nada sabia. E ali, à porta de um velho edifício encardido nos bairros pobres de Londres, os investigadores chegaram a uma parede cega - derrotados.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

No dia depois da morte de Alexis Paulvitch, um jovem viajando com a avó doente embarcou num vapor em Dover. A velha usava um véu grosso, e por causa da idade e da doença, teve que ser carregada a bordo numa cadeira de rodas.

Original English

The day following the death of Alexis Paulvitch a youth accompanying his invalid grandmother, boarded a steamer at Dover. The old lady was heavily veiled, and so weakened by age and sickness that she had to be wheeled aboard the vessel in an invalid chair.

Original Português

No dia seguinte à morte de Alexis Paulvitch, um jovem acompanhando sua avó inválida embarcou em Dover num vapor. A velha senhora estava pesadamente velada e tão enfraquecida pela idade e pela doença que teve de ser levada a bordo em uma cadeira de inválidos.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O menino não deixava ninguém além dele empurrar a cadeira dela. Também a ajudou a sair da cadeira e entrar na cabine com as próprias mãos. Depois disso, ninguém do navio viu a velha senhora de novo até desembarcarem. O menino até disse que faria o trabalho do camareiro, porque, explicou, sua avó tinha um temperamento nervoso e odiava ter estranhos por perto.

Original English

The boy would permit none but himself to wheel her, and with his own hands assisted her from the chair to the interior of their stateroom -- and that was the last that was seen of the old lady by the ship's company until the pair disembarked. The boy even insisted upon doing the work of their cabin steward, since, as he explained, his grandmother was suffering from a nervous disposition that made the presence of strangers extremely distasteful to her.

Original Português

O menino não permitia que ninguém além dele a empurrasse, e com as próprias mãos ajudou-a a sair da cadeira e entrar no interior do camarote - e foi a última vez que a companhia do navio viu a velha senhora até o desembarque do par. O menino insistia até em fazer o trabalho do camareiro, pois, como explicou, sua avó sofria de uma disposição nervosa que tornava a presença de estranhos extremamente desagradável para ela.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Fora da cabine, e ninguém a bordo sabia o que ele fazia dentro dela, o menino era como qualquer outro menino inglês saudável. Se misturava com os outros passageiros e se tornou favorito dos oficiais. Também fez muitos amigos entre os marinheiros. Era generoso e tranquilo, mas também tinha um caráter orgulhoso e forte que fazia as pessoas admirá-lo e gostar dele.

Original English

Outside the cabin -- and none there was aboard who knew what he did in the cabin -- the lad was just as any other healthy, normal English boy might have been. He mingled with his fellow passengers, became a prime favorite with the officers, and struck up numerous friendships among the common sailors. He was generous and unaffected, yet carried an air of dignity and strength of character that inspired his many new friends with admiration as well as affection for him.

Original Português

Fora do camarote - e não havia ninguém a bordo que soubesse o que ele fazia dentro dele - o rapaz era exatamente como qualquer outro menino inglês saudável e normal poderia ter sido. Misturava-se aos demais passageiros, tornou-se grande favorito dos oficiais e travou numerosas amizades entre os marinheiros comuns. Era generoso e simples, mas trazia um ar de dignidade e força de caráter que inspirava em seus muitos novos amigos admiração, bem como afeição por ele.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Um americano chamado Condon estava no navio. Era um criminoso conhecido, procurado em várias cidades dos Estados Unidos. Não notou o menino até vê-lo mostrar acidentalmente um maço de dinheiro. Depois disso, Condon ficou amigo do menino. Soube que o menino viajava com a avó doente. O destino deles era um pequeno porto na costa oeste da África, perto do equador. O sobrenome deles era Billings, e não tinham amigos lá. Quando Condon perguntou o motivo da viagem, o menino não quis dizer. Condon não insistiu mais. Já sabia o suficiente.

Original English

Among the passengers there was an American named Condon, a noted blackleg and crook who was "wanted" in a half dozen of the larger cities of the United States. He had paid little attention to the boy until on one occasion he had seen him accidentally display a roll of bank notes. From then on Condon cultivated the youthful Briton. He learned, easily, that the boy was traveling alone with his invalid grandmother, and that their destination was a small port on the west coast of Africa, a little below the equator; that their name was Billings, and that they had no friends in the little settlement for which they were bound. Upon the point of their purpose in visiting the place Condon found the boy reticent, and so he did not push the matter -- he had learned all that he cared to know as it was.

Original Português

Entre os passageiros havia um americano chamado Condon, conhecido jogador trapaceiro e vigarista, procurado em meia dúzia das maiores cidades dos Estados Unidos. Prestara pouca atenção ao menino até que, certa vez, o viu acidentalmente exibir um maço de notas. A partir daí Condon cultivou o jovem britânico. Soube facilmente que o menino viajava sozinho com sua avó inválida e que seu destino era um pequeno porto na costa oeste da África, pouco abaixo do equador; que se chamavam Billings e que não tinham amigos no pequeno povoado para o qual se dirigiam. Quanto ao propósito de visitar o lugar, Condon achou o menino reticente, e por isso não insistiu - já aprendera tudo o que queria saber.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Várias vezes Condon tentou fazer o menino entrar num jogo de cartas. Mas o menino não se interessou, e os olhares de raiva de alguns outros homens fizeram Condon decidir encontrar outro jeito de conseguir o dinheiro do menino.

Original English

Several times Condon attempted to draw the lad into a card game; but his victim was not interested, and the black looks of several of the other men passengers decided the American to find other means of transferring the boy's bank roll to his own pocket.

Original Português

Várias vezes Condon tentou atrair o rapaz para um jogo de cartas; mas sua vítima não se interessou, e os olhares sombrios de vários dos outros passageiros homens decidiram o americano a encontrar outros meios de transferir o maço de dinheiro do menino para o próprio bolso.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Por fim chegou o dia em que o vapor ancorou perto de um promontório arborizado. Ali, umas vinte cabanas de chapa de ferro formavam uma marca feia na terra e mostravam que a civilização tinha chegado. Ao redor ficavam as cabanas de palha do povo nativo. Pareciam selvagens e antigas, e combinavam com a selva tropical atrás delas. Ao mesmo tempo, faziam a feiura pobre dos primeiros prédios dos colonos brancos parecer ainda pior.

Original English

At last came the day that the steamer dropped anchor in the lee of a wooded promontory where a score or more of sheet-iron shacks making an unsightly blot upon the fair face of nature proclaimed the fact that civilization had set its heel. Straggling upon the outskirts were the thatched huts of natives, picturesque in their primeval savagery, harmonizing with the background of tropical jungle and accentuating the squalid hideousness of the white man's pioneer architecture.

Original Português

Por fim chegou o dia em que o vapor lançou âncora ao abrigo de um promontório arborizado, onde cerca de vinte barracos de chapas de ferro, formando uma mancha feia no belo rosto da natureza, proclamavam o fato de que a civilização pusera ali o calcanhar. Espalhadas pelas bordas estavam as cabanas de palha dos nativos, pitorescas em sua selvageria primeva, harmonizando-se com o fundo de selva tropical e acentuando a hedionda sordidez da arquitetura pioneira do homem branco.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O menino se debruçou na amurada e olhou bem além da cidade feita pelo homem, para dentro da selva feita por Deus. Um pequeno arrepio de emoção percorreu suas costas. Depois, sem querer, pareceu ver os olhos carinhosos da mãe e o rosto forte do pai, que também mostrava amor. Sentiu sua determinação começar a enfraquecer. Perto dali, um dos oficiais do navio gritava ordens a um grupo de barcos nativos que se aproximavam para carregar a carga do vapor para aquele pequeno posto.

Original English

The boy, leaning over the rail, was looking far beyond the man-made town deep into the God-made jungle. A little shiver of anticipation tingled his spine, and then, quite without volition, he found himself gazing into the loving eyes of his mother and the strong face of the father which mirrored, beneath its masculine strength, a love no less than the mother's eyes proclaimed. He felt himself weakening in his resolve. Nearby one of the ship's officers was shouting orders to a flotilla of native boats that was approaching to lighten the consignment of the steamer's cargo destined for this tiny post.

Original Português

O menino, debruçado sobre a amurada, olhava muito além da cidade feita pelo homem, para dentro da selva feita por Deus. Um pequeno arrepio de expectativa lhe percorreu a espinha, e então, sem volição alguma, encontrou-se fitando os olhos amorosos da mãe e o rosto forte do pai, que refletia, sob sua força masculina, um amor não menor do que aquele proclamado pelos olhos maternos. Sentiu enfraquecer sua resolução. Perto dali, um dos oficiais do navio gritava ordens a uma flotilha de barcos nativos que se aproximava para descarregar a remessa da carga do vapor destinada àquele posto minúsculo.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Quando o próximo navio para a Inglaterra passa por aqui?", perguntou o menino.

Original English

"When does the next steamer for England touch here?" the boy asked.

Original Português

- Quando o próximo vapor para a Inglaterra toca aqui? - perguntou o menino.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"O Emanuel deve chegar logo", respondeu o oficial. "Achei que o encontraríamos aqui", e continuou gritando suas observações para a multidão empoeirada que se aproximava do navio.

Original English

"The Emanuel ought to be along most any time now," replied the officer. "I figured we'd find her here," and he went on with his bellowing remarks to the dusty horde drawing close to the steamer's side.

Original Português

- O Emanuel deve aparecer a qualquer momento - respondeu o oficial. - Achei que a encontraríamos aqui - e continuou a berrar suas observações à horda poeirenta que se aproximava do costado do vapor.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Descer a avó do menino até uma canoa que esperava foi difícil. O menino ficou bem ao lado dela o tempo todo. Por fim ela ficou em segurança na canoa, e ele desceu atrás dela como um gato. Estava tão ocupado ajudando-a que não notou um pacotinho escorregando do bolso. Caiu no mar.

Original English

The task of lowering the boy's grandmother over the side to a waiting canoe was rather difficult. The lad insisted on being always at her side, and when at last she was safely ensconced in the bottom of the craft that was to bear them shoreward her grandson dropped catlike after her. So interested was he in seeing her comfortably disposed that he failed to notice the little package that had worked from his pocket as he assisted in lowering the sling that contained the old woman over the steamer's side, nor did he notice it even as it slipped out entirely and dropped into the sea.

Original Português

A tarefa de descer a avó do menino pela borda até uma canoa à espera foi bastante difícil. O rapaz insistiu em estar sempre a seu lado, e quando por fim ela foi instalada em segurança no fundo da embarcação que os levaria à praia, o neto saltou atrás dela com agilidade felina. Tão interessado estava em vê-la confortavelmente acomodada que não notou o pequeno pacote que saíra de seu bolso enquanto ajudava a baixar a tipoia que continha a velha senhora pelo costado do vapor, nem o notou mesmo quando ele se soltou por completo e caiu no mar.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Logo depois que o barco com o menino e a velha saiu em direção à praia, Condon chamou uma canoa do outro lado do navio. Depois de negociar com o dono, colocou suas malas e ele mesmo nela. Quando chegou à terra, ficou fora da vista do lugar feio de dois andares marcado "Hotel". Só entrou para providenciar um quarto quando já estava bem escuro.

Original English

Scarcely had the boat containing the boy and the old woman started for the shore than Condon hailed a canoe upon the other side of the ship, and after bargaining with its owner finally lowered his baggage and himself aboard. Once ashore he kept out of sight of the two-story atrocity that bore the legend "Hotel" to lure unsuspecting wayfarers to its multitudinous discomforts. It was quite dark before he ventured to enter and arrange for accommodations.

Original Português

Mal o barco que levava o menino e a velha iniciou a travessia para a praia, Condon chamou uma canoa do outro lado do navio e, depois de negociar com seu dono, baixou sua bagagem e a si mesmo a bordo. Uma vez em terra, manteve-se fora da vista da atrocidade de dois andares que ostentava a legenda "Hotel" para atrair viajantes incautos a seus múltiplos desconfortos. Já estava bem escuro quando se aventurou a entrar e providenciar acomodações.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Num quarto dos fundos no segundo andar, o menino tentava explicar à avó que tinha decidido voltar para a Inglaterra no próximo navio. Disse a ela que podia ficar na África se quisesse, mas ele sentia que devia voltar para o pai e a mãe. Achava que eles estavam sofrendo por causa da sua ausência. Isso mostra que os pais dele não sabiam do plano de aventura feito por ele e pela velha.

Original English

In a back room upon the second floor the lad was explaining, not without considerable difficulty, to his grandmother that he had decided to return to England upon the next steamer. He was endeavoring to make it plain to the old lady that she might remain in Africa if she wished but that for his part his conscience demanded that he return to his father and mother, who doubtless were even now suffering untold sorrow because of his absence; from which it may be assumed that his parents had not been acquainted with the plans that he and the old lady had made for their adventure into African wilds.

Original Português

Num quarto dos fundos, no segundo andar, o rapaz explicava, não sem considerável dificuldade, à avó que decidira voltar para a Inglaterra no próximo vapor. Esforçava-se por deixar claro à velha senhora que ela poderia permanecer na África se quisesse, mas que, por sua parte, a consciência exigia que retornasse a seu pai e sua mãe, que sem dúvida sofriam dores indizíveis por sua ausência; do que se pode presumir que seus pais não haviam sido informados dos planos que ele e a velha senhora fizeram para sua aventura nas regiões selvagens africanas.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Depois de tomar a decisão, o menino sentiu alívio da preocupação que o incomodava havia muitas noites sem dormir. Quando adormeceu, sonhou com um encontro feliz com a família em casa. Mas enquanto dormia, o Destino veio devagar pelo corredor escuro do prédio sujo. O Destino veio na forma do ladrão americano, Condon.

Original English

Having come to a decision the lad felt a sense of relief from the worry that had haunted him for many sleepless nights. When he closed his eyes in sleep it was to dream of a happy reunion with those at home. And as he dreamed, Fate, cruel and inexorable, crept stealthily upon him through the dark corridor of the squalid building in which he slept -- Fate in the form of the American crook, Condon.

Original Português

Tendo tomado uma decisão, o rapaz sentiu alívio da preocupação que o perseguira por muitas noites sem sono. Quando fechou os olhos para dormir, foi para sonhar com uma reunião feliz com aqueles de casa. E enquanto sonhava, o Destino, cruel e inexorável, avançava furtivamente sobre ele pelo corredor escuro do prédio sórdido em que dormia - o Destino na forma do vigarista americano, Condon.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Com cuidado, o homem se aproximou da porta do menino. Esperou e escutou até a respiração regular lá dentro dizer que os dois dormiam. Depois colocou uma chave fina na fechadura. Girou a chave e a maçaneta juntas, e empurrou a porta. Entrou e fechou a porta atrás dele. Nuvens escuras cobriam a lua, então o quarto estava bem escuro. Condon foi em direção à cama. No canto distante, algo se moveu em silêncio. Mas Condon não ouviu nada. Estava olhando só para a cama, onde esperava encontrar um menino e sua avó doente e indefesa.

Original English

Cautiously the man approached the door of the lad's room. There he crouched listening until assured by the regular breathing of those within that both slept. Quietly he inserted a slim, skeleton key in the lock of the door. With deft fingers, long accustomed to the silent manipulation of the bars and bolts that guarded other men's property, Condon turned the key and the knob simultaneously. Gentle pressure upon the door swung it slowly inward upon its hinges. The man entered the room, closing the door behind him. The moon was temporarily overcast by heavy clouds. The interior of the apartment was shrouded in gloom. Condon groped his way toward the bed. In the far corner of the room something moved -- moved with a silent stealthiness which transcended even the trained silence of the burglar. Condon heard nothing. His attention was riveted upon the bed in which he thought to find a young boy and his helpless, invalid grandmother.

Original Português

Cautelosamente o homem aproximou-se da porta do quarto do rapaz. Ali se agachou, escutando até se assegurar, pela respiração regular dos que estavam dentro, de que ambos dormiam. Silenciosamente introduziu uma fina chave-mestra na fechadura da porta. Com dedos hábeis, há muito acostumados à manipulação silenciosa de barras e ferrolhos que guardavam a propriedade alheia, Condon girou a chave e a maçaneta simultaneamente. Uma leve pressão empurrou a porta devagar para dentro sobre as dobradiças. O homem entrou no quarto, fechando a porta atrás de si. A lua estava momentaneamente encoberta por nuvens pesadas. O interior do aposento jazia mergulhado na sombra. Condon tateou o caminho até a cama. No canto distante do quarto, algo se moveu - moveu-se com uma furtividade silenciosa que transcendia até o silêncio treinado do ladrão. Condon nada ouviu. Sua atenção estava cravada na cama onde pensava encontrar um menino e sua avó inválida e indefesa.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O americano só queria o maço de dinheiro. Se conseguisse pegar sem ser visto, ótimo. Se alguém revidasse, ele também estava pronto para isso. As roupas do menino estavam numa cadeira ao lado da cama. Condon as revistou rápido, mas não encontrou o maço de notas novas. Devia estar embaixo do travesseiro. Se aproximou mais e colocou a mão embaixo do travesseiro. Nesse instante a nuvem se afastou e o luar encheu o quarto. No mesmo momento o menino abriu os olhos e olhou direto para Condon. Condon viu na hora que o menino estava sozinho na cama. Foi até a garganta do menino. Mas quando o menino se levantou, Condon ouviu um rosnado baixo atrás dele. Depois o menino segurou seus pulsos, e Condon sentiu a força naquelas mãos brancas e finas.

Original English

The American sought only the bank roll. If he could possess himself of this without detection, well and good; but were he to meet resistance he was prepared for that too. The lad's clothes lay across a chair beside the bed. The American's fingers felt swiftly through them -- the pockets contained no roll of crisp, new notes. Doubtless they were beneath the pillows of the bed. He stepped closer toward the sleeper; his hand was already half way beneath the pillow when the thick cloud that had obscured the moon rolled aside and the room was flooded with light. At the same instant the boy opened his eyes and looked straight into those of Condon. The man was suddenly conscious that the boy was alone in the bed. Then he clutched for his victim's throat. As the lad rose to meet him Condon heard a low growl at his back, then he felt his wrists seized by the boy, and realized that beneath those tapering, white fingers played muscles of steel.

Original Português

O americano buscava apenas o maço de dinheiro. Se pudesse apoderar-se dele sem ser descoberto, ótimo; mas, se encontrasse resistência, estava preparado também para isso. As roupas do rapaz estavam sobre uma cadeira ao lado da cama. Os dedos do americano as revistaram rapidamente - os bolsos não continham nenhum rolo de notas novas e crispadas. Sem dúvida estavam sob os travesseiros da cama. Ele deu um passo mais perto do dorminhoco; sua mão já estava a meio caminho sob o travesseiro quando a nuvem espessa que obscurecera a lua se afastou e o quarto se inundou de luz. No mesmo instante o menino abriu os olhos e fitou diretamente os de Condon. O homem percebeu de súbito que o menino estava sozinho na cama. Então agarrou em direção à garganta da vítima. Quando o rapaz se ergueu para enfrentá-lo, Condon ouviu um rosnado baixo às costas; então sentiu os pulsos presos pelo

menino e percebeu que sob aqueles dedos brancos e afilados brincavam músculos de aço.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Então sentiu outras mãos na garganta, mãos ásperas e peludas alcançando por cima de seus ombros por trás. Olhou para trás apavorado e viu um macaco enorme, parecido com um homem, segurando-o por trás. Os dentes à mostra do macaco estavam perto da garganta dele. O menino segurava seus pulsos para que não pudesse se mexer. Ninguém fez nenhum som. Condon olhou ao redor do quarto e de repente entendeu a verdade terrível. Em que criaturas estranhas tinha se colocado nas mãos? Lutou desesperadamente para se livrar do menino e se virar contra a criatura atrás dele. Solto uma mão e bateu com força no rosto do menino. Isso pareceu liberar uma fúria selvagem na criatura peluda em sua garganta. Condon ouviu um rosnado baixo e selvagem. Foi a última coisa que ele ouviu na vida. Depois foi puxado para trás no chão. Um corpo pesado caiu sobre ele, dentes fortes se afundaram em sua garganta, e tudo ficou escuro. Um momento depois o macaco se levantou do corpo dele, mas Condon não soube disso. Estava morto.

Original English

He felt other hands at his throat, rough hairy hands that reached over his shoulders from behind. He cast a terrified glance backward, and the hairs of his head stiffened at the sight his eyes revealed, for grasping him from the rear was a huge, man-like ape. The bared fighting fangs of the anthropoid were close to his throat. The lad pinioned his wrists. Neither uttered a sound. Where was the grandmother? Condon's eyes swept the room in a single all-inclusive glance. His eyes bulged in horror at the realization of the truth which that glance revealed. In the power of what creatures of hideous mystery had he placed himself! Frantically he fought to beat off the lad that he might turn upon the fearsome thing at his back. Freeing one hand he struck a savage blow at the lad's face. His act seemed to unloose a thousand devils in the hairy creature clinging to his throat. Condon heard a low and savage snarl. It was the last thing that the American ever heard in this life. Then he was dragged backward upon the floor, a heavy body fell upon him, powerful teeth fastened themselves in his jugular, his head whirled in the sudden blackness which rims eternity -- a moment later the ape rose from his prostrate form; but Condon did not know -- he was quite dead.

Original Português

Sentiu outras mãos em seu pescoço, mãos ásperas e peludas que lhe alcançavam por cima dos ombros, vindas de trás. Lançou um olhar aterrorizado para trás, e seus cabelos se eriçaram diante do que seus olhos revelaram: agarrando-o por trás estava um enorme macaco

semelhante a homem. As presas de combate do antropeide estavam muito próximas. O rapaz prendia-lhe os pulsos. Nenhum deles emitiu som. Onde estava a avó? Os olhos de Condon varreram o quarto num único olhar abrangente. Arregalaram-se de horror ao compreender a verdade que aquele olhar revelava. Em poder de que criaturas de mistério hediondo ele se colocara! Freneticamente lutou para afastar o rapaz, a fim de voltar-se contra a coisa temível às suas costas. Libertando uma das mãos, desferiu um golpe selvagem no rosto do rapaz. Seu ato pareceu soltar mil demônios na criatura peluda agarrada a ele. Condon ouviu um rosnado baixo e selvagem. Foi a última coisa que o americano ouviu nesta vida. Então foi arrastado para trás ao chão, um corpo pesado caiu sobre ele, e, um momento depois, o macaco ergueu-se de sua forma prostrada; mas Condon nada soube - estava morto.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O menino, chocado, pulou da cama e se debruçou sobre o corpo do homem. Sabia que o Akut tinha matado para protegê-lo, assim como matara Michael Sabrov. Mas agora estavam na África selvagem, longe de casa e amigos. O que as pessoas fariam com o Akut e com ele? O menino sabia que assassinato podia trazer a pena de morte. Também sabia que um cúmplice podia ser punido também. Quemalaria por eles? Todos estariam contra eles. Era um lugar meio selvagem, meio civilizado. Achou que arrastariam o Akut e ele para fora pela manhã e os enforcariam na árvore mais próxima. Tinha lido sobre coisas assim na América. A África parecia ainda pior e mais selvagem que o oeste americano. Sim, os dois seriam enforcados pela manhã!

Original English

The lad, horrified, sprang from the bed to lean over the body of the man. He knew that Akut had killed in his defense, as he had killed Michael Sabrov; but here, in savage Africa, far from home and friends what would they do to him and his faithful ape? The lad knew that the penalty of murder was death. He even knew that an accomplice might suffer the death penalty with the principal. Who was there who would plead for them? All would be against them. It was little more than a half-civilized community, and the chances were that they would drag Akut and him forth in the morning and hang them both to the nearest tree -- he had read of such things being done in America, and Africa was worse even and wilder than the great West of his mother's native land. Yes, they would both be hanged in the morning!

Original Português

O rapaz, horrorizado, saltou da cama para inclinar-se sobre o corpo do homem. Sabia que Akut matara em sua defesa, como matara Michael Sabrov; mas ali, na África selvagem, longe de casa e dos amigos, o que fariam a ele e a seu fiel macaco? O rapaz sabia que a pena por homicídio era a morte. Sabia até que um cúmplice podia sofrer a pena capital junto com o autor principal. Quem haveria de interceder por eles? Todos estariam contra eles. Era pouco mais que uma comunidade semi-civilizada, e as chances eram de que arrastariam Akut e ele pela manhã e os enforcariam na árvore mais próxima - lera sobre tais coisas feitas na América, e a África era ainda pior e mais selvagem que o grande Oeste da terra natal de sua mãe. Sim, ambos seriam enforcados pela manhã!

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Não havia como escapar? Pensou por um momento em silêncio. Depois sentiu alívio. Bateu palmas e olhou para suas roupas na cadeira. Dinheiro podia resolver tudo. Podia salvá-lo e ao Akut. Procurou o maço de dinheiro no bolso, mas tinha sumido. Revistou os outros bolsos, primeiro devagar e depois em pânico. Caiu de joelhos e mãos e olhou pelo chão. Acendeu a lâmpada, moveu a cama para o lado, e apalpou cada centímetro do chão. Parou ao lado do corpo de Condon, depois se forçou a tocá-lo. Virou o corpo e procurou embaixo dele pelo dinheiro. Também não estava ali. Achou que Condon tinha entrado no quarto para roubar, mas não acreditava que o homem tivesse tido tempo de pegar o dinheiro. Mesmo assim, não estava em nenhum outro lugar, então devia estar no corpo do morto. De novo e de novo revistou o quarto e voltou ao cadáver, mas não conseguiu achar o dinheiro.

Original English

Was there no escape? He thought in silence for a few moments, and then, with an exclamation of relief, he struck his palms together and turned toward his clothing upon the chair. Money would do anything! Money would save him and Akut! He felt for the bank roll in the pocket in which he had been accustomed to carry it. It was not there! Slowly at first and at last frantically he searched through the remaining pockets of his clothing. Then he dropped upon his hands and knees and examined the floor. Lighting the lamp he moved the bed to one side and, inch by inch, he felt over the entire floor. Beside the body of Condon he hesitated, but at last he nerved himself to touch it. Rolling it over he sought beneath it for the money. Nor was it there. He guessed that Condon had entered their room to rob; but he did not believe that the man had had time to possess himself of the money; however, as it was nowhere else, it must be upon the body of the dead man. Again and again he went over the room, only to return each time to the corpse; but no where could he find the money.

Original Português

Não havia fuga? Pensou em silêncio por alguns momentos e então, com uma exclamação de alívio, bateu as palmas e voltou-se para suas roupas sobre a cadeira. O dinheiro faria qualquer coisa! O dinheiro salvaria ele e Akut! Tacteu em busca do maço no bolso em que costumava carregá-lo. Não estava ali! Primeiro devagar, e por fim freneticamente, vasculhou os demais bolsos de suas roupas. Então caiu de mãos e joelhos e examinou o assoalho. Acendendo o lampião, afastou a cama e, polegada por polegada, apalpou todo o chão. Ao lado do corpo de Condon hesitou, mas por fim armou-se de coragem para tocá-lo. Virando-o, procurou embaixo

dele o dinheiro. Também não estava ali. Adivinhou que Condon entrara no quarto para roubar; mas não acreditava que o homem tivesse tido tempo de apoderar-se do dinheiro. Contudo, como não estava em outro lugar, devia estar no corpo do morto. Repetidas vezes percorreu o quarto, apenas para voltar cada vez ao cadáver; mas em parte alguma conseguiu encontrar o dinheiro.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Estava quase louco de desespero. O que podiam fazer? Pela manhã seriam encontrados e mortos. Mesmo com seu corpo grande e força, ainda era só um menininho, um menino assustado que sentia falta de casa e raciocinava mal porque sabia pouco sobre a vida. Um fato terrível preenchia sua mente: tinham matado um homem, e estavam entre estranhos selvagens que teriam sede do sangue da primeira vítima que o destino lhes desse. Foi isso que aprendeu com histórias baratas de aventura.

Original English

He was half-frantic with despair. What were they to do? In the morning they would be discovered and killed. For all his inherited size and strength he was, after all, only a little boy -- a frightened, homesick little boy -- reasoning faultily from the meager experience of childhood. He could think of but a single glaring fact -- they had killed a fellow man, and they were among savage strangers, thirsting for the blood of the first victim whom fate cast into their clutches. This much he had gleaned from penny-dreadfuls.

Original Português

Estava meio enlouquecido de desespero. Que fariam? Pela manhã seriam descobertos e mortos. Apesar de todo o tamanho e força herdados, era, afinal, apenas um menino pequeno - um menino assustado e saudoso de casa - raciocinando de forma defeituosa a partir da experiência escassa da infância. Só conseguia pensar num único fato gritante - haviam matado um semelhante e estavam entre estranhos selvagens, sedentos do sangue da primeira vítima que o destino lhes lançasse às garras. Isso ele aprendera em romances baratos de terror.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

E precisavam de dinheiro!

Original English

And they must have money!

Original Português

E precisavam ter dinheiro!

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

De novo foi até o corpo, dessa vez com coragem. O macaco sentou num canto e observou o jovem. Ele começou a tirar as roupas do americano peça por peça, e revistou cada uma com cuidado. Até revistou os sapatos com muito cuidado. Quando terminou e não achou nada, deitou na cama com olhos arregalados. Não via nada ao redor, só uma imagem escura do futuro, onde dois corpos pendiam em silêncio do galho de uma grande árvore.

Original English

Again he approached the corpse. This time resolutely. The ape squatted in a corner watching his young companion. The youth commenced to remove the American's clothing piece by piece, and, piece by piece, he examined each garment minutely. Even to the shoes he searched with painstaking care, and when the last article had been removed and scrutinized he dropped back upon the bed with dilated eyes that saw nothing in the present -- only a grim tableau of the future in which two forms swung silently from the limb of a great tree.

Original Português

De novo aproximou-se do cadáver. Desta vez resolutamente. O macaco agachava-se num canto, observando seu jovem companheiro. O rapaz começou a retirar as roupas do americano peça por peça, e, peça por peça, examinou minuciosamente cada peça. Procurou com cuidado até nos sapatos, e quando o último artigo fora removido e examinado, deixou-se cair de volta sobre a cama, com olhos dilatados que nada viam do presente - apenas um quadro sombrio do futuro, no qual duas formas pendiam silenciosas do galho de uma grande árvore.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Não sabia quanto tempo ficou sentado ali. Por fim, um barulho do andar de baixo o fez pular. Rápido apagou a lâmpada, atravessou o chão em silêncio, e trancou a porta. Depois se virou para o macaco, com a mente decidida.

Original English

How long he sat thus he did not know; but finally he was aroused by a noise coming from the floor below. Springing quickly to his feet he blew out the lamp, and crossing the floor silently locked the door. Then he turned toward the ape, his mind made up.

Original Português

Quanto tempo ficou sentado assim, não soube; mas por fim foi despertado por um ruído vindo do andar de baixo. Saltando rapidamente de pé, apagou o lampião e atravessou o chão em silêncio para trancar a porta. Então voltou-se para o macaco, decidido.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Só na noite anterior, ele estava pronto para voltar para casa na primeira chance e pedir aos pais que perdoassem essa aventura louca. Agora sabia que talvez nunca mais os visse. Sentia o sangue de um homem em suas mãos. Em seus pensamentos perturbados, já não culpava o macaco pela morte de Condon. O pânico o tinha feito acreditar que ele mesmo era culpado. Se tivesse dinheiro, talvez pudesse comprar justiça. Mas sem um tostão, que esperança poderiam ter estrangeiros ali?

Original English

Last evening he had been determined to start for home at the first opportunity, to beg the forgiveness of his parents for this mad adventure. Now he knew that he might never return to them. The blood of a fellow man was upon his hands -- in his morbid reflections he had long since ceased to attribute the death of Condon to the ape. The hysteria of panic had fastened the guilt upon himself. With money he might have bought justice; but penniless! -- ah, what hope could there be for strangers without money here?

Original Português

Na noite anterior estivera determinado a partir para casa na primeira oportunidade, para pedir o perdão dos pais por aquela aventura louca. Agora sabia que talvez nunca voltasse para eles. O sangue de um semelhante estava em suas mãos - em suas reflexões mórbidas, há muito deixara de atribuir a morte de Condon ao macaco. A histeria do pânico fixara a culpa nele mesmo. Com dinheiro, talvez pudesse ter comprado justiça; mas sem um tostão! - ah, que esperança poderia haver para estrangeiros sem dinheiro ali?

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Mas o que tinha acontecido com o dinheiro? Tentou lembrar quando o tinha visto pela última vez. Não conseguiu lembrar. E mesmo que conseguisse, não saberia como ele tinha sumido. Não notou quando o pacotinho caiu do bolso no mar. Isso aconteceu quando ele desceu pelo costado do navio até a canoa que o levou à praia.

Original English

But what had become of the money? He tried to recall when last he had seen it. He could not, nor, could he, would he have been able to account for its disappearance, for he had been entirely unconscious of the falling of the little package from his pocket into the sea as he clambered over the ship's side into the waiting canoe that bore him to shore.

Original Português

Mas que acontecera ao dinheiro? Tentou recordar quando o vira pela última vez. Não conseguiu; e, ainda que conseguisse, não teria sido capaz de explicar seu desaparecimento, pois estivera inteiramente inconsciente da queda do pequeno pacote de seu bolso para o mar enquanto descia pelo costado do navio para a canoa à espera que o levara à praia.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Então se virou para o Akut. "Venha!", disse na língua dos grandes macacos.

Original English

Now he turned toward Akut. "Come!" he said, in the language of the great apes.

Original Português

Agora voltou-se para Akut. "Venha!" disse, na língua dos grandes macacos.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Esquecendo que estava vestindo só um pijama fino, foi até a janela aberta. Colocou a cabeça para fora e escutou com cuidado. Uma única árvore ficava a poucos metros da janela. O menino pulou para o tronco e se segurou como um gato por um momento antes de descer em silêncio até o chão. O grande macaco o seguiu de perto. A duzentas jardas, a selva chegava perto da pequena cidade. O menino foi na frente para lá. Ninguém os viu. Um momento depois, a selva os escondeu, e John Clayton, o futuro Lord Greystoke, desapareceu da vista e do conhecimento dos homens.

Original English

Forgetful of the fact that he wore only a thin pajama suit he led the way to the open window. Thrusting his head out he listened attentively. A single tree grew a few feet from the window. Nimbly the lad sprang to its bole, clinging cat-like for an instant before he clambered quietly to the ground below. Close behind him came the great ape. Two hundred yards away a spur of the jungle ran close to the straggling town. Toward this the lad led the way. None saw them, and a moment later the jungle swallowed them, and John Clayton, future Lord Greystoke, passed from the eyes and the knowledge of men.

Original Português

Esquecido de que vestia apenas um fino pijama, conduziu o caminho até a janela aberta. Projetando a cabeça para fora, escutou atentamente. Uma única árvore crescia a poucos pés da janela. Com agilidade, o rapaz saltou para seu tronco, agarrando-se como um gato por um instante antes de descer silenciosamente ao chão abaixo. Logo atrás veio o grande macaco. A duzentas jardas, uma língua da selva aproximava-se da cidade dispersa. Para lá o rapaz conduziu o caminho. Ninguém os viu, e um momento depois a selva os engoliu; e John Clayton, futuro Lord Greystoke, desapareceu dos olhos e do conhecimento dos homens.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Era tarde na manhã seguinte quando um criado nativo bateu na porta do quarto dado à senhora Billings e seu neto. Sem resposta, tentou a chave-mestra, mas encontrou outra chave já na fechadura, do lado de dentro. Contou a Herr Skopf, o dono, que na hora subiu ao segundo andar e bateu com força na porta também. De novo não houve resposta. Se inclinou para olhar pelo buraco da fechadura, e por ser um homem pesado, perdeu o equilíbrio. Colocou a mão no chão para se firmar. Depois sentiu algo macio, grosso e molhado sob os dedos. Na luz fraca do corredor, olhou para a palma da mão e estremeceu ao ver uma mancha vermelho-escura na mão. Pulou e jogou o ombro contra a porta. Herr Skopf era um homem pesado então, ou pelo menos era. Não o vejo há vários anos. A porta fraca quebrou com o peso dele, e ele caiu depressa para dentro do quarto.

Original English

It was late the following morning that a native houseman knocked upon the door of the room that had been assigned to Mrs. Billings and her grandson. Receiving no response he inserted his pass key in the lock, only to discover that another key was already there, but from the inside. He reported the fact to Herr Skopf, the proprietor, who at once made his way to the second floor where he, too, pounded vigorously upon the door. Receiving no reply he bent to the key hole in an attempt to look through into the room beyond. In so doing, being portly, he lost his balance, which necessitated putting a palm to the floor to maintain his equilibrium. As he did so he felt something soft and thick and wet beneath his fingers. He raised his open palm before his eyes in the dim light of the corridor and peered at it. Then he gave a little shudder, for even in the semi-darkness he saw a dark red stain upon his hand. Leaping to his feet he hurled his shoulder against the door. Herr Skopf is a heavy man -- or at least he was then -- I have not seen him for several years. The frail door collapsed beneath his weight, and Herr Skopf stumbled precipitately into the room beyond.

Original Português

Era tarde na manhã seguinte quando um criado nativo bateu à porta do quarto destinado à senhora Billings e seu neto. Sem receber resposta, inseriu a chave-mestra na fechadura, apenas para descobrir que outra chave já estava ali, pelo lado de dentro. Relatou o fato a Herr Skopf, o proprietário, que imediatamente subiu ao segundo andar, onde também bateu vigorosamente à porta. Sem receber resposta, inclinou-se para o buraco da fechadura tentando olhar para o quarto além. Ao fazê-lo, por ser

corpulento, perdeu o equilíbrio, o que o obrigou a pôr a palma da mão no chão para manter-se de pé. Ao fazê-lo, sentiu algo macio, espesso e úmido sob os dedos. Ergueu a palma aberta diante dos olhos na luz fraca do corredor e a examinou. Então deu um pequeno estremecimento, pois mesmo na penumbra viu uma mancha vermelho-escura na mão. Saltando de pé, lançou o ombro contra a porta. Herr Skopf é um homem pesado - ou ao menos era então; não o vejo há vários anos. A porta frágil cedeu sob seu peso, e Herr Skopf tropeçou precipitadamente para dentro do quarto.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Diante dele estava o maior mistério de sua vida. A seus pés estava o corpo morto de um homem estranho. Seu pescoço estava quebrado, e sua garganta cortada, como se por um animal selvagem. Estava completamente nu, e suas roupas espalhadas ao redor. A velha senhora e seu neto tinham sumido. A janela estava aberta. Deviam ter saído por ela, porque a porta tinha sido trancada por dentro.

Original English

Before him lay the greatest mystery of his life. Upon the floor at his feet was the dead body of a strange man. The neck was broken and the jugular severed as by the fangs of a wild beast. The body was entirely naked, the clothing being strewn about the corpse. The old lady and her grandson were gone. The window was open. They must have disappeared through the window for the door had been locked from the inside.

Original Português

Diante dele estava o maior mistério de sua vida. No chão a seus pés jazia o corpo morto de um homem estranho. O pescoço estava quebrado e havia marcas compatíveis com o ataque de uma fera. O corpo estava inteiramente nu, as roupas espalhadas ao redor dele. A velha senhora e seu neto haviam desaparecido. A janela estava aberta. Devem ter desaparecido pela janela, pois a porta fora trancada pelo lado de dentro.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Mas como o menino poderia ter carregado a avó doente de uma janela do segundo andar até o chão? Era impossível. Herr Skopf revistou o quartinho de novo. Viu que a cama tinha sido movida bem longe da parede. Por quê? Olhou embaixo dela de novo pela terceira ou quarta vez. Os dois tinham sumido, mas ele sabia que a velha não poderia ter saído sem homens para carregá-la, assim como a tinham carregado no dia anterior.

Original English

But how could the boy have carried his invalid grandmother from a second story window to the ground? It was preposterous. Again Herr Skopf searched the small room. He noticed that the bed was pulled well away from the wall -- why? He looked beneath it again for the third or fourth time. The two were gone, and yet his judgment told him that the old lady could not have gone without porters to carry her down as they had carried her up the previous day.

Original Português

Mas como poderia o menino ter carregado sua avó inválida de uma janela do segundo andar até o chão? Era absurdo. De novo Herr Skopf examinou o pequeno quarto. Notou que a cama fora afastada da parede - por quê? Olhou debaixo dela outra vez, pela terceira ou quarta vez. Os dois haviam sumido, e ainda assim seu juízo lhe dizia que a velha não poderia ter saído sem carregadores para levá-la para baixo, como a haviam levado para cima no dia anterior.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Mais buscas só aprofundaram o mistério. Todas as roupas dos dois ainda estavam no quarto, então se tinham partido, deviam ter partido nus ou de roupa de dormir. Herr Skopf balançou a cabeça, depois a coçou. Estava perplexo. Nunca tinha ouvido falar de Sherlock Holmes, ou não teria perdido tempo em chamar aquele famoso detetive, pois ali havia um verdadeiro mistério. Uma velha, uma inválida que teve que ser carregada do navio até o quarto, e seu neto bonito, tinham entrado num quarto do segundo andar de seu hotel no dia anterior. A refeição da noite deles tinha sido servida no quarto, e essa foi a última vez que alguém os viu. Às nove da manhã seguinte, o corpo de um estranho era a única coisa naquele quarto. Nenhum barco tinha saído do porto nesse meio tempo. Não havia estrada de ferro a centenas de milhas. Não havia outro povoado branco que os dois pudessem alcançar sem vários dias de marcha difícil com um safári bem equipado. Simplesmente tinham desaparecido no ar. O nativo que ele tinha mandado checar o chão embaixo da janela aberta tinha acabado de voltar dizendo que não havia sinal de pegada, e que tipo de criaturas poderiam ter caído daquela altura na grama macia sem deixar rastro? Herr Skopf estremeceu. Sim, era um grande mistério. Havia algo sobrenatural em tudo aquilo. Odiava pensar nisso, e temia a chegada da noite.

Original English

Further search deepened the mystery. All the clothing of the two was still in the room -- if they had gone then they must have gone naked or in their night clothes. Herr Skopf shook his head; then he scratched it. He was baffled. He had never heard of Sherlock Holmes or he would have lost no time in invoking the aid of that celebrated sleuth, for here was a real mystery: An old woman -- an invalid who had to be carried from the ship to her room in the hotel -- and a handsome lad, her grandson, had entered a room on the second floor of his hostelry the day before. They had had their evening meal served in their room -- that was the last that had been seen of them. At nine the following morning the corpse of a strange man had been the sole occupant of that room. No boat had left the harbor in the meantime -- there was not a railroad within hundreds of miles -- there was no other white settlement that the two could reach under several days of arduous marching accompanied by a well-equipped safari. They had simply vanished into thin air, for the native he had sent to inspect the ground beneath the open window had just returned to report that there was no sign of a footstep there, and what sort of creatures were they who could have dropped that distance to the soft turf without leaving spoor? Herr Skopf shuddered. Yes, it was a great mystery -- there was something uncanny

about the whole thing -- he hated to think about it, and he dreaded the coming of night.

Original Português

Nova busca aprofundou o mistério. Todas as roupas dos dois ainda estavam no quarto - se haviam partido, então deviam ter partido nus ou em roupas de dormir. Herr Skopf balançou a cabeça; depois a coçou. Estava perplexo. Nunca ouvira falar de Sherlock Holmes, ou não teria perdido tempo em invocar a ajuda daquele célebre detetive, pois aqui havia um verdadeiro mistério: uma velha - inválida, que tivera de ser carregada do navio até seu quarto no hotel - e um belo rapaz, seu neto, haviam entrado no dia anterior num quarto do segundo andar de sua hospedaria. Tiveram a refeição da noite servida no quarto - essa foi a última vez que foram vistos. Às nove da manhã seguinte, o cadáver de um estranho era o único ocupante daquele aposento. Nenhum barco saíra do porto nesse intervalo - não havia estrada de ferro a centenas de milhas - não havia outro povoado branco que os dois pudessem alcançar sem vários dias de marcha árdua acompanhados por um safári bem equipado. Simplesmente haviam desaparecido no ar, pois o nativo que ele enviara para inspecionar o chão sob a janela aberta acabara de voltar relatando que não havia ali sinal de pegada; e que espécie de criaturas eram eles, capazes de cair daquela altura sobre a relva macia sem deixar rastro? Herr Skopf estremeceu. Sim, era um grande mistério - havia algo de sobrenatural em tudo aquilo - ele odiava pensar nisso e temia a chegada da noite.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Era um grande mistério para Herr Skopf, e provavelmente ainda é.

Original English

It was a great mystery to Herr Skopf -- and, doubtless, still is.

Original Português

Era um grande mistério para Herr Skopf - e, sem dúvida, ainda é.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Chapter 5

B1 Português (simplified)

O capitão Armand Jacot, da Legião Estrangeira, estava sentado numa manta de sela aberta ao pé de uma pequena palmeira. Seus ombros largos e a cabeça de cabelo curto descansavam confortavelmente contra o tronco áspero. Suas pernas longas estavam esticadas à frente, e suas esporas enterradas no chão arenoso de um pequeno oásis do deserto. Ele descansava depois de um longo dia cavalgando pelas areias movediças do deserto.

Original English

Captain Armand Jacot of the Foreign Legion sat upon an outspread saddle blanket at the foot of a stunted palm tree. His broad shoulders and his close-cropped head rested in luxurious ease against the rough bole of the palm. His long legs were stretched straight before him overlapping the meager blanket, his spurs buried in the sandy soil of the little desert oasis. The captain was taking his ease after a long day of weary riding across the shifting sands of the desert.

Original Português

O capitão Armand Jacot, da Legião Estrangeira, estava sentado sobre uma manta de sela estendida ao pé de uma palmeira raquítica. Seus ombros largos e a cabeça de cabelos curtos repousavam em luxuoso conforto contra o tronco áspero da palmeira. Suas longas pernas estendiam-se retas diante dele, ultrapassando a manta estreita, as esporas enterradas no solo arenoso do pequeno oásis desértico. O capitão descansava depois de um longo dia de cavalgada cansativa pelas areias móveis do deserto.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Fumava seu cigarro preguiçosamente e observava seu ordenança preparar a refeição da noite. O capitão Armand Jacot estava muito satisfeito consigo e com a vida. À sua direita, sua tropa de veteranos bronzeados estava ocupada e barulhenta. Estavam livres por um tempo da disciplina rígida e relaxavam os músculos cansados, rindo, brincando e fumando enquanto se preparavam para comer depois de doze horas sem comida. Entre eles sentavam-se cinco árabes de mantos brancos. Estavam calados, bem amarrados, e vigiados por guardas.

Original English

Lazily he puffed upon his cigarette and watched his orderly who was preparing his evening meal. Captain Armand Jacot was well satisfied with himself and the world. A little to his right rose the noisy activity of his troop of sun-tanned veterans, released for the time from the irksome trammels of discipline, relaxing tired muscles, laughing, joking, and smoking as they, too, prepared to eat after a twelve-hour fast. Among them, silent and taciturn, squatted five white-robed Arabs, securely bound and under heavy guard.

Original Português

Preguiçosamente, tragava o cigarro e observava seu ordenança preparando a refeição da noite. O capitão Armand Jacot estava satisfeito consigo mesmo e com o mundo. Um pouco à sua direita elevava-se a ruidosa atividade de sua tropa de veteranos bronzeados pelo sol, liberados por ora dos incômodos entraves da disciplina, relaxando músculos cansados, rindo, brincando e fumando enquanto também se preparavam para comer depois de um jejum de doze horas. Entre eles, silenciosos e taciturnos, agachavam-se cinco árabes de mantos brancos, firmemente amarrados e sob forte guarda.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Vê-los dava ao capitão Armand Jacot o sentimento feliz de um trabalho bem feito. Por um mês longo e quente, ele e sua pequena tropa tinham vasculhado o deserto atrás de um bando de saqueadores. Essa quadrilha era culpada de muitos camelos, cavalos e cabras roubados, e de assassinatos suficientes para mandá-los à guilhotina várias vezes.

Original English

It was the sight of these that filled Captain Armand Jacot with the pleasurable satisfaction of a duty well-performed. For a long, hot, gaunt month he and his little troop had scoured the places of the desert waste in search of a band of marauders to the sin-stained account of which were charged innumerable thefts of camels, horses, and goats, as well as murders enough to have sent the whole unsavory gang to the guillotine several times over.

Original Português

Era a visão desses homens que enchia o capitão Armand Jacot da agradável satisfação do dever bem cumprido. Durante um mês longo, quente e extenuante, ele e sua pequena tropa haviam vasculhado os lugares do deserto em busca de um bando de saqueadores, à conta manchada de pecados dos quais se debitavam incontáveis roubos de camelos, cavalos e cabras, bem como assassinatos suficientes para enviar toda a quadrilha repugnante à guilhotina várias vezes.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Uma semana antes, ele os tinha encontrado. Na batalha que se seguiu, perdeu dois de seus homens, mas os saqueadores foram quase destruídos. Talvez seis tenham escapado, mas o resto, exceto os cinco prisioneiros, foi morto pelas balas dos legionários. Melhor de tudo, o líder deles, Achmet ben Houdin, estava entre os prisioneiros.

Original English

A week before, he had come upon them. In the ensuing battle he had lost two of his own men, but the punishment inflicted upon the marauders had been severe almost to extinction. A half dozen, perhaps, had escaped; but the balance, with the exception of the five prisoners, had expiated their crimes before the nickel jacketed bullets of the legionaries. And, best of all, the ring leader, Achmet ben Houdin, was among the prisoners.

Original Português

Uma semana antes, dera com eles. Na batalha subsequente perdera dois de seus próprios homens, mas a punição infligida aos saqueadores fora severa, quase até a extinção. Meia dúzia, talvez, escapara; mas o restante, com exceção dos cinco prisioneiros, expiara seus crimes diante das balas encamisadas dos legionários. E, melhor de tudo, o chefe, Achmet ben Houdin, estava entre os prisioneiros.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Deixando os prisioneiros, o capitão Jacot deixou a mente viajar pelas milhas restantes de areia até o pequeno posto militar onde veria a esposa e a filhinha no dia seguinte. Pensar neles sempre suavizava seus olhos. Já podia imaginar a beleza da mãe no rosto da pequena Jeanne, e os dois rostos sorriam para ele quando descesse do cavalo cansado no fim da tarde seguinte. Quase podia sentir as bochechas macias pressionadas contra a sua, como veludo contra couro.

Original English

From the prisoners Captain Jacot permitted his mind to traverse the remaining miles of sand to the little garrison post where, upon the morrow, he should find awaiting him with eager welcome his wife and little daughter. His eyes softened to the memory of them, as they always did. Even now he could see the beauty of the mother reflected in the childish lines of little Jeanne's face, and both those faces would be smiling up into his as he swung from his tired mount late the following afternoon. Already he could feel a soft cheek pressed close to each of his -- velvet against leather.

Original Português

Dos prisioneiros, o capitão Jacot permitiu que a mente atravessasse as milhas restantes de areia até o pequeno posto de guarnição onde, no dia seguinte, encontraria à sua espera, com acolhida ansiosa, a esposa e a filhinha. Seus olhos se suavizaram à lembrança delas, como sempre acontecia. Mesmo agora podia ver a beleza da mãe refletida nas linhas infantis do rosto da pequena Jeanne, e ambos os rostos estariam sorrindo para ele quando saltasse de sua montaria cansada no fim da tarde seguinte. Já podia sentir uma face macia apertada contra cada uma das suas - veludo contra couro.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Seu devaneio foi interrompido pela voz de um guarda chamando um oficial subalterno. O capitão Jacot ergueu os olhos. O sol ainda não tinha se posto, mas as sombras das poucas árvores ao redor do poço e de seus homens e cavalos se estendiam longe para o leste sobre a areia dourada. O guarda apontava naquela direção, e o cabo, olhos semicerrados, olhava para a distância. O capitão Jacot se levantou. Não era homem de se contentar em ver pelos olhos dos outros. Precisava ver com os próprios olhos. Normalmente via as coisas muito antes de os outros saberem que havia algo para ver, uma qualidade que lhe dera o apelido de Falcão. Agora viu, logo além das sombras longas, uma dúzia de pontinhos subindo e descendo entre as areias. Sumiam e reapareciam, mas sempre cresciam. Jacot os reconheceu na hora. Eram cavaleiros do deserto. Já um sargento corria em sua direção. Todo o acampamento olhava para a distância. Jacot deu algumas ordens curtas ao sargento, que bateu continência, se virou e voltou aos homens. Reuniu doze, que selaram os cavalos, montaram e cavalgaram ao encontro dos estranhos. Os outros homens se prepararam para ação rápida. Era possível que os cavaleiros correndo tão rápido para o acampamento fossem amigos dos prisioneiros, tentando libertar seus parentes com um ataque surpresa. Mas Jacot duvidava disso, porque os estranhos não tentavam se esconder. Galopavam rápido para o acampamento, à vista de todos. Podia haver trapaça por trás daquele ar honesto, mas ninguém que conhecesse O Falcão seria tolo o bastante para esperar enganá-lo assim.

Original English

His reverie was broken in upon by the voice of a sentry summoning a non-commissioned officer. Captain Jacot raised his eyes. The sun had not yet set; but the shadows of the few trees huddled about the water hole and of his men and their horses stretched far away into the east across the now golden sand. The sentry was pointing in this direction, and the corporal, through narrowed lids, was searching the distance. Captain Jacot rose to his feet. He was not a man content to see through the eyes of others. He must see for himself. Usually he saw things long before others were aware that there was anything to see -- a trait that had won for him the sobriquet of Hawk. Now he saw, just beyond the long shadows, a dozen specks rising and falling among the sands. They disappeared and reappeared, but always they grew larger. Jacot recognized them immediately. They were horsemen -- horsemen of the desert. Already a sergeant was running toward him. The entire camp was straining its eyes into the distance. Jacot gave a few terse orders to the sergeant who saluted, turned upon his heel and returned to the men. Here he gathered a dozen who saddled their

horses, mounted and rode out to meet the strangers. The remaining men disposed themselves in readiness for instant action. It was not entirely beyond the range of possibilities that the horsemen riding thus swiftly toward the camp might be friends of the prisoners bent upon the release of their kinsmen by a sudden attack. Jacot doubted this, however, since the strangers were evidently making no attempt to conceal their presence. They were galloping rapidly toward the camp in plain view of all. There might be treachery lurking beneath their fair appearance; but none who knew The Hawk would be so gullible as to hope to trap him thus.

Original Português

Seu devaneio foi interrompido pela voz de uma sentinela chamando um suboficial. O capitão Jacot ergueu os olhos. O sol ainda não se pusera; mas as sombras das poucas árvores agrupadas ao redor do poço de água e de seus homens e cavalos estendiam-se longe para o leste, sobre a areia agora dourada. A sentinela apontava nessa direção, e o cabo, de pálpebras estreitadas, sondava a distância. O capitão Jacot pôs-se de pé. Não era homem contente em ver pelos olhos alheios. Precisava ver por si. Em geral via as coisas muito antes que os outros percebessem que havia algo a ver - traço que lhe rendera o apelido de Falcão. Agora viu, logo além das longas sombras, uma dúzia de pontos que subiam e desciam entre as areias. Desapareciam e reapareciam, mas sempre cresciam. Jacot reconheceu-os imediatamente. Eram cavaleiros - cavaleiros do deserto. Já um sargento corria em sua direção. Todo o acampamento forçava os olhos para a distância. Jacot deu algumas ordens breves ao sargento, que bateu continência, girou sobre os calcanhares e voltou aos homens. Ali reuniu uma dúzia que selou os cavalos, montou e cavalgou ao encontro dos estranhos. Os demais homens se dispuseram prontos para ação imediata. Não estava inteiramente fora do âmbito das possibilidades que os cavaleiros que vinham assim tão depressa para o acampamento fossem amigos dos prisioneiros, decididos a libertar seus parentes por meio de um ataque súbito. Jacot duvidava disso, contudo, pois os estranhos evidentemente não faziam tentativa de ocultar sua presença. Galopavam rapidamente para o acampamento à vista de todos. Podia haver traição escondida sob a aparência franca; mas ninguém que conhecesse O Falcão seria tão crédulo a ponto de esperar apanhá-lo assim.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O sargento e seus homens encontraram os árabes a cerca de duzentas jardas do acampamento. Jacot o viu conversando com um homem alto de mantos brancos, claramente o líder. Logo o sargento e o árabe cavalgaram lado a lado em direção ao acampamento. Jacot os esperou. Pararam, puxaram as rédeas e desceram diante dele.

Original English

The sergeant with his detail met the Arabs two hundred yards from the camp. Jacot could see him in conversation with a tall, white-robed figure -- evidently the leader of the band. Presently the sergeant and this Arab rode side by side toward camp. Jacot awaited them. The two reined in and dismounted before him.

Original Português

O sargento com seu destacamento encontrou os árabes a duzentas jardas do acampamento. Jacot pôde vê-lo conversando com uma figura alta, vestida de branco - evidentemente o chefe do bando. Logo o sargento e esse árabe cavalgaram lado a lado até o acampamento. Jacot os aguardou. Os dois refrearam os cavalos e desmontaram diante dele.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Xeque Amor ben Khatour", disse o sargento como apresentação.

Original English

"Sheik Amor ben Khatour," announced the sergeant by way of introduction.

Original Português

- Xeque Amor ben Khatour - anunciou o sargento à guisa de apresentação.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O capitão Jacot olhou para o novo homem. Conhecia quase todos os árabes importantes num raio de várias centenas de milhas, mas nunca tinha visto esse. O homem era alto, parecia desgastado pelo tempo e amargo e hostil. Tinha sessenta anos ou mais. Seus olhos eram estreitos e maldosos. O capitão Jacot não gostou da aparência dele.

Original English

Captain Jacot eyed the newcomer. He was acquainted with nearly every principal Arab within a radius of several hundred miles. This man he never had seen. He was a tall, weather beaten, sour looking man of sixty or more. His eyes were narrow and evil. Captain Jacot did not relish his appearance.

Original Português

O capitão Jacot examinou o recém-chegado. Conhecia quase todos os principais árabes num raio de várias centenas de milhas. Aquele homem jamais vira. Era alto, curtido pelo tempo, de aparência azeda, com sessenta anos ou mais. Seus olhos eram estreitos e malignos. O capitão Jacot não gostou de sua aparência.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Então?", perguntou com cuidado.

O árabe foi direto ao ponto.

Original English

"Well?" he asked, tentatively.

The Arab came directly to the point.

Original Português

- Pois bem? - perguntou, em tom experimental.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Original Português

O árabe foi direto ao ponto.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Achmet ben Houdin é filho da minha irmã", disse. "Se o senhor me entregar ele, vou garantir que não quebre mais as leis francesas."

Original English

"Achmet ben Houdin is my sister's son," he said. "If you will give him into my keeping I will see that he sins no more against the laws of the French."

Original Português

- Achmet ben Houdin é filho de minha irmã - disse. - Se o entregar à minha guarda, cuidarei para que não peque mais contra as leis dos franceses.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

Jacot balançou a cabeça. "Isso não pode ser", disse. "Preciso levá-lo comigo. Ele será julgado com justiça por um tribunal civil. Se for inocente, será solto."

Original English

Jacot shook his head. "That cannot be," he replied. "I must take him back with me. He will be properly and fairly tried by a civil court. If he is innocent he will be released."

Original Português

Jacot balançou a cabeça. "Isso não pode ser", respondeu. "Devo levá-lo de volta comigo. Será julgado de modo adequado e justo por um tribunal civil. Se for inocente, será libertado."

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"E se não for inocente?", perguntou o árabe.

"Ele é acusado de muitos assassinatos. Se for considerado culpado de mesmo um, precisa morrer."

Original English

"And if he is not innocent?" asked the Arab.

"He is charged with many murders. For any one of these, if he is proved guilty, he will have to die."

Original Português

- E se não for inocente? - perguntou o árabe.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Original Português

- É acusado de muitos assassinatos. Por qualquer um deles, se for provado culpado, terá de morrer.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O árabe mantinha a mão esquerda escondida sob o burnus. Depois a tirou e mostrou uma grande bolsa de pele de cabra, cheia e pesada de moedas. Abriu e deixou parte do dinheiro cair na mão direita. Era tudo ouro francês de boa qualidade. Pelo tamanho da bolsa, o capitão Jacot achou que continha uma pequena fortuna. O xeque Amor ben Khatour devolveu as moedas à bolsa uma a uma. Jacot o observava de perto. Estavam sozinhos, e o sargento tinha se afastado de costas para eles. Então o xeque estendeu a bolsa cheia na palma aberta em direção ao capitão Jacot.

Original English

The Arab's left hand was hidden beneath his burnous. Now he withdrew it disclosing a large goatskin purse, bulging and heavy with coins. He opened the mouth of the purse and let a handful of the contents trickle into the palm of his right hand -- all were pieces of good French gold. From the size of the purse and its bulging proportions Captain Jacot concluded that it must contain a small fortune. Sheik Amor ben Khatour dropped the spilled gold pieces one by one back into the purse. Jacot was eyeing him narrowly. They were alone. The sergeant, having introduced the visitor, had withdrawn to some little distance -- his back was toward them. Now the sheik, having returned all the gold pieces, held the bulging purse outward upon his open palm toward Captain Jacot.

Original Português

A mão esquerda do árabe estava escondida sob o burnous. Agora ele a retirou, revelando uma grande bolsa de pele de cabra, abaulada e pesada de moedas. Abriu a boca da bolsa e deixou um punhado do conteúdo escorrer para a palma da mão direita - todas eram peças de bom ouro francês. Pelo tamanho da bolsa e por suas proporções cheias, o capitão Jacot concluiu que devia conter uma pequena fortuna. O xeque Amor ben Khatour deixou cair de volta na bolsa, uma a uma, as moedas de ouro derramadas. Jacot o observava estreitamente. Estavam sós. O sargento, tendo apresentado o visitante, retirara-se para certa distância - de costas para eles. Agora o xeque, tendo devolvido todas as moedas de ouro, estendeu a bolsa abaulada sobre a palma aberta em direção ao capitão Jacot.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Achmet ben Houdin, filho da minha irmã, poderia escapar esta noite", disse. "Hein?"

Original English

"Achmet ben Houdin, my sister's son, MIGHT escape tonight," he said. "Eh?"

Original Português

- Achmet ben Houdin, filho de minha irmã, PODERIA escapar esta noite - disse. - Eh?

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O capitão Armand Jacot ficou vermelho até a raiz do cabelo curto. Depois ficou muito pálido e deu meio passo em direção ao árabe. Seus punhos estavam fechados. De repente, mudou de ideia e não agiu no impulso.

Original English

Captain Armand Jacot flushed to the roots of his close-cropped hair. Then he went very white and took a half-step toward the Arab. His fists were clenched. Suddenly he thought better of whatever impulse was moving him.

Original Português

O capitão Armand Jacot corou até a raiz dos cabelos cortados rente. Depois ficou muito branco e deu meio passo em direção ao árabe. Seus punhos estavam cerrados. De repente, reconsiderou qualquer impulso que o movia.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Sargento!", chamou. O sargento veio rápido e bateu continência.

Original English

"Sergeant!" he called. The non-commissioned officer hurried toward him, saluting as his heels clicked together before his superior.

Original Português

- Sargento! - chamou. O suboficial apressou-se até ele, saudando enquanto seus calcanhares se juntavam diante do superior.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

"Leve esse cachorro negro de volta ao seu povo", ordenou. "Faça-os partir agora. Atire no primeiro homem que se aproximar do acampamento esta noite."

Original English

"Take this black dog back to his people," he ordered. "See that they leave at once. Shoot the first man who comes within range of camp tonight."

Original Português

- Leve este cão negro de volta ao seu povo - ordenou. - Veja que partam imediatamente. Atire no primeiro homem que entrar ao alcance do acampamento esta noite.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

B1 Português (simplified)

O xeque Amor ben Khatour se ergueu em toda a sua altura. Seus olhos cruéis se estreitaram. Segurou a bolsa de ouro na frente dos olhos do oficial francês.

Original English

Sheik Amor ben Khatour drew himself up to his full height. His evil eyes narrowed. He raised the bag of gold level with the eyes of the French officer.

Original Português

O xeque Amor ben Khatour endireitou-se em toda a sua altura. Seus olhos malignos se estreitaram. Ergueu a bolsa de ouro ao nível dos olhos do oficial francês.

[Back to B1](#) [Original English](#)

Glossary: New Words

Priority words from the simplified reading, selected by CEFR level, rarity and editorial usefulness. Each entry shows up to six real sentences from this book; every return link opens that exact sentence in the simplified version.

accuse /ə'kju:z/ (3 occurrences)

Português: acusar; acuse; acuso

Simple English: To say a person or group committed a wrongdoing.

Example: *The lawyer will accuse the defendant of fraud during the trial.*

Forms in this book: accuse, accused, accusing

Uses in this book:

1. "He is accused of many murders. [Back to B1](#)

Address /ə'drɛs/ (5 occurrences)

Português: endereço; morada; abordar

Simple English: The details of where someone lives or works.

Example: *Write your address here.*

Forms in this book: address, addressed

Uses in this book:

1. He did have the address the trainer had given his father, and two days later he escaped his new tutor, who had taken Mr. Moore's place. [Back to B1](#)
2. There he hired a cab to take him to the Russian's address. [Back to B1](#)
3. A cab driver had taken him to the old Russian's address. [Back to B1](#)

amount (3 occurrences)

Português: quantidade; montante; valor

Forms in this book: amount, amounts

Uses in this book:

1. The scientists went far inland, searching for the valuable thing that local stories had promised might be found there in large amounts. [Back to B1](#)
2. No amount of persuasion could make him go on stage again, and when the trainer once tried force, he was lucky to escape alive. [Back to B1](#)

approve /ə'pru:v/ (2 occurrences)

Português: aprovar; autorizar

Simple English: To officially agree or accept a plan or proposal after review.

Example: *The committee will approve the project's budget during their next meeting.*

Uses in this book:

1. "You know I do not approve of such shows." [Back to B1](#)
2. "Your mother does not approve," his father answered. [Back to B1](#)

Attempt /ə'tempt/ (2 occurrences)

Português: tentativa; tente; tentar

Simple English: To make an effort to achieve something difficult or challenging.

Example: *She decided to attempt the difficult puzzle despite its complexity.*

Forms in this book: attempt, attempts

Uses in this book:

1. After many failed attempts, he managed to tap the toe of his boot against the floor. [Back to B1](#)
2. But Jacot doubted this, because the strangers were making no attempt to hide. [Back to B1](#)

bitter /'bɪtər/ (6 occurrences)

Português: amargo; ressentido; azedo

Simple English: Having a sharp unpleasant taste.

Example: *The coffee was bitter.*

Uses in this book:

1. Every waking moment was filled with sick, bitter hate. [Back to B1](#)
2. He was too weak to work and too bitter for company, so they soon left him alone. [Back to B1](#)
3. He had grown more bitter as he thought about the failures and misery of his life, and he blamed Tarzan for them. [Back to B1](#)

blame /bleɪm/ (11 occurrences)

Português: culpar; culpa; responsabilizar

Simple English: To say or feel someone is responsible for a problem.

Example: *It's easy to blame others when things go wrong, but we should take responsibility too.*

Forms in this book: blame, blamed

Uses in this book:

1. I cannot blame him because we all attacked him at the same time." [Back to B1](#)
2. "Well, I don't blame you, my son," said the father. [Back to B1](#)
3. Weak and criminal people often blame others for their own problems. [Back to B1](#)
4. He had grown more bitter as he thought about the failures and misery of his life, and he blamed Tarzan for them. [Back to B1](#)
5. He blamed that refusal directly on Tarzan and finally convinced himself that the ape man had told the great ape not to go on stage. [Back to B1](#)
6. But it would keep Paulvitch from being blamed, because the fault would seem to belong to the ape, who would also be punished for refusing to support the Russian any longer. [Back to B1](#)

brief /brɪf/ (2 occurrences)

Português: breve; sucinta; resumo

Simple English: A short document summarizing one side's facts in court.

Example: *The lawyer submitted a brief outlining their arguments in the case.*

Uses in this book:

1. He spoke briefly about being born in the jungle, losing his parents, and being raised by Kala, the great she ape. [Back to B1](#)

Chair /tʃeər/ (6 occurrences)

Português: cadeira; poltrona; presidente

Simple English: A seat with a back.

Example: *Please sit on the chair.*

Uses in this book:

1. He had been sitting in a large chair and reading when he suddenly looked up and spoke to his father. [Back to B1](#)
2. The boy had jumped to his feet and picked up a chair. [Back to B1](#)
3. The old woman wore a thick veil, and because of her age and illness, she had to be carried aboard in a wheeled chair. [Back to B1](#)
4. He also helped her from the chair into their cabin with his own hands. [Back to B1](#)
5. The boy's clothes were on a chair beside the bed. [Back to B1](#)
6. He clapped his hands and looked at his clothes on the chair. [Back to B1](#)

chief /tʃi:f/ (11 occurrences)

Português: chefe; principal; diretor

Simple English: The most important or highest-ranking person or thing.

Example: *The chief executive will announce the new company strategy tomorrow.*

Forms in this book: chief, chiefs

Uses in this book:

1. For some strange reason, the chief saved Paulvitch from death, but only to give him a life of misery and torture. [Back to B1](#)
2. "I am Waja, chief of the Waji," he said. [Back to B1](#)

civil /'sɪvəl/ (1 occurrence)

Português: civil; cível

Simple English: Related to ordinary people not involved in military actions.

Example: *Civil rights are important and must be protected during wartime conflicts.*

Uses in this book:

1. He will be judged fairly by a civil court. [Back to B1](#)

commission (1 occurrence)

Português: comissão; taxa; grupo oficial

Simple English: a group with official duties or money paid for sales

Example: *She earns a commission on each sale.*

Uses in this book:

1. His daydream was broken by the voice of a guard calling a non-commissioned officer. [Back to B1](#)

conscious /'kɒnfəs/ (1 occurrence)

Português: consciente

Simple English: Aware of one's surroundings, feelings, or actions.

Example: *She was conscious of the need to improve her public speaking skills.*

Uses in this book:

1. This helped him become conscious again. [Back to B1](#)

convinced /kən'vɪnst/ (1 occurrence)

Português: convencido; convenceu; convicto

Simple English: Having a strong belief in something.

Example: *He is convinced that he will win the competition next week.*

Uses in this book:

1. He blamed that refusal directly on Tarzan and finally convinced himself that the ape man had told the great ape not to go on stage. [Back to B1](#)

crash /kræʃ/ (2 occurrences)

Português: acidente; bater; queda

Simple English: Accident in which a vehicle collides with something.

Example: *The crash caused a major traffic jam on the highway this morning.*

Forms in this book: crash, crashed

Uses in this book:

1. At the bottom of the door lay the unconscious body of Mr. Moore, and the door fell on him with a loud crash. [Back to B1](#)

crew /kru:/ (6 occurrences)

Português: tripulação; equipe; grupo

Simple English: A group of people with shared skills participating in a common activity.

Example: *The film crew worked late to finish shooting the movie.*

Uses in this book:

1. The crew rested after hard work rowing upstream. [Back to B1](#)
2. "What the hell?" one of the crew said. [Back to B1](#)
3. Life on board became dull and hard for the crew. [Back to B1](#)
4. The crew fished, hunted, and explored. [Back to B1](#)
5. The captain did not stop this, so the big ape was quietly accepted as part of the ship's crew. [Back to B1](#)

defeat /di'fi:t/ (4 occurrences)

Português: derrota; derrotar; vencer

Simple English: To win against someone in a war, game, or contest.

Example: *Our team managed to defeat the rivals in the championship match last week.*

Forms in this book: defeat, defeated

Uses in this book:

1. But the ape was not easy to defeat, even against so many attackers. [Back to B1](#)

defend /di'fend/ (4 occurrences)

Português: defender; defesa

Simple English: To prevent harm or protect someone or something from danger.

Example: *The knights were ready to defend the castle from the invading army.*

Uses in this book:

1. He stood beside the ape, ready to defend his new friend. [Back to B1](#)

delay /dɪˈleɪ/ (4 occurrences)

Português: atraso; demora; atrasar

Simple English: To arrive later than originally planned or expected.

Example: *Our flight faced a delay due to bad weather conditions.*

Forms in this book: delay, delaying

Uses in this book:

1. The manager grew angry at the delay and told the trainer to hurry. [Back to B1](#)

delighted /dɪˈlaɪtɪd/ (1 occurrence)

Português: encantado; deleitado; deliciar

Simple English: Experiencing great joy or pleasure from something positive.

Example: *I was delighted to receive an award for my hard work and dedication.*

Uses in this book:

1. The audience was delighted. [Back to B1](#)

desert /dɪˈzɜːrt/ (12 occurrences)

Português: deserto; desertar; sobremesa

Simple English: A dry area with little rain.

Example: *The Sahara is a desert.*

Forms in this book: desert, deserted, deserts

Uses in this book:

1. His long legs were stretched out in front of him, and his spurs were buried in the sandy ground of a small desert oasis. [Back to B1](#)
2. He was resting after a long day of hard riding over the shifting desert sands. [Back to B1](#)
3. For a long, hot month, he and his small troop had searched the desert for a band of raiders. [Back to B1](#)
4. They were horsemen of the desert. [Back to B1](#)

Desire /dɪˈzaɪər/ (9 occurrences)

Português: desejo; deseja; vontade

Simple English: To feel a sexual or strong romantic attraction.

Example: *He felt a strong desire to be with her all the time.*

Forms in this book: desire, desired

Uses in this book:

1. She only shook her head, still hoping the strong jungle desire in the father had not passed to the son. [Back to B1](#)
2. Since he saw Tarzan again at the theater, a desire for revenge had started growing in his mind. [Back to B1](#)

desperate /ˈdɛspərət/ (2 occurrences)

Português: desesperado

Simple English: Being in a dangerous situation and acting without care.

Example: *In a desperate attempt, he jumped into the water to save her.*

Uses in this book:

1. At last, the trainer became desperate. [Back to B1](#)

detail /ˈdiːteɪl/ (1 occurrence)

Português: detalhe; pormenor; detalhar

Simple English: To explain something thoroughly with specific information.

Example: *In her presentation, she will detail the findings of her latest research project.*

Uses in this book:

1. Then the details of his terrible experience came back to him. [Back to B1](#)

discipline /ˈdɪsəplɪn/ (1 occurrence)

Português: disciplina; disciplinar

Simple English: Training and punishment methods enforcing rules and improving behavior.

Example: *Teachers use discipline to help students learn right from wrong.*

Uses in this book:

1. They were free for a while from strict discipline and relaxed their tired muscles, laughing, joking, and smoking as they got ready to eat after twelve

hours without food. [Back to B1](#)

dishonest /dis'ɒnɪst/ (1 occurrence)

Português: desonesto

Simple English: Not truthful or trustworthy, often engaging in immoral behavior.

Example: *Being dishonest can damage trust in personal relationships significantly.*

Uses in this book:

1. He looked nothing like the strong but dishonest Alexis Paulvitch he had once been. [Back to B1](#)

drag /dræg/ (9 occurrences)

Português: arrastar; arrasto; desloque

Simple English: To move digital items on a screen by holding the mouse button.

Example: *You can drag the icon to the desktop for easier access.*

Forms in this book: drag, dragged

Uses in this book:

1. He thought they would drag Akut and him out in the morning and hang them from the nearest tree. [Back to B1](#)

encourage /ɪn'kʌrɪdʒ/ (1 occurrence)

Português: incentivar; encorajar; estimular

Simple English: To give support or confidence to someone during challenges.

Example: *My parents always encourage me to pursue my dreams and passions.*

Uses in this book:

1. So Paulvitch encouraged the boy to visit him often. [Back to B1](#)

Failure /'feɪljər/ (2 occurrences)

Português: falha; fracasso; insuficiência

Simple English: Absence of success or unsuccessful result of effort.

Example: *The project was considered a failure due to poor planning and execution.*

Uses in this book:

1. He had grown more bitter as he thought about the failures and misery of his life, and he blamed Tarzan for them. [Back to B1](#)

fault /fɔ:lt/ (4 occurrences)

Português: culpa; falha; defeito

Simple English: Responsibility attributed for a mistake or misfortune.

Example: *It's not my fault that the meeting was canceled last minute.*

Uses in this book:

1. "It was not his fault, captain," Paulvitch said. [Back to B1](#)

2. But the trouble is that he is very intelligent, and he learns so fast that I cannot find fault with how he prepares his lessons. [Back to B1](#)

3. He thought that all the bad things that happened to him were Tarzan's fault. [Back to B1](#)

4. But it would keep Paulvitch from being blamed, because the fault would seem to belong to the ape, who would also be punished for refusing to support the Russian any longer. [Back to B1](#)

firm /fɜ:rm/ (4 occurrences)

Português: firme; empresa; escritório

Simple English: A company or business, often owned by two or more partners.

Example: *He works at a law firm that specializes in family law.*

Forms in this book: firm, firmly

Uses in this book:

1. What do you say?" He turned to his wife, but she only shook her head firmly. [Back to B1](#)

2. "No, John," she said firmly. [Back to B1](#)

float /flaʊt/ (3 occurrences)

Português: flutuar; flutuador; bóia

Simple English: To move slowly on water or in the air.

Example: *The boat began to float gently on the calm lake.*

Forms in this book: floated, floating

Uses in this book:

1. The long boat of the Marjorie W. floated down the wide Ugambi with the tide and current. [Back to B1](#)

forgive /fər'gɪv/ (2 occurrences)

Português: perdoar; Desculpe

Simple English: To stop being angry and choose not to punish someone.

Example: *It's important to forgive those who have wronged you for inner peace.*

Forms in this book: forgive, forgives

Uses in this book:

1. Only the night before, he had been ready to leave for home at the first chance and ask his parents to forgive him for this crazy adventure. [Back to B1](#)

fortune /'fɔ:rtʃən/ (2 occurrences)

Português: fortuna; sorte; fonseca

Simple English: Very large sum of money or valuable assets.

Example: *She inherited a fortune from her grandparents and became very wealthy.*

Uses in this book:

1. From the size of the purse, Captain Jacot guessed it held a small fortune. [Back to B1](#)

Freedom /'fri:dəm/ (10 occurrences)

Português: liberdade

Simple English: Right to act, speak, or think without restriction.

Example: *Everyone deserves the freedom to express their own opinions.*

Uses in this book:

1. I am going now, but I shall return!" Tarzan's son then crossed the room, went through the open window, and slid down the rain pipe to freedom. [Back to B1](#)
2. At last he told the man openly that he wanted to send the beast back to freedom in his jungle home. [Back to B1](#)

gain /geɪn/ (2 occurrences)

Português: ganho; ganhar; ganham

Simple English: To obtain or achieve something desired or needed.

Example: *He hopes to gain valuable experience from this internship opportunity.*

Forms in this book: gain, gained

Uses in this book:

1. Paulvitch then thought the ape was worth a lot of money, and before they reached the sailors he had decided he should be the one to gain from it. [Back to B1](#)

gang /gæŋ/ (1 occurrence)

Português: gangue; quadrilha; bando

Simple English: Group of criminals who work together.

Example: *A gang of thieves was caught planning a robbery in the mall.*

Uses in this book:

1. This gang was blamed for many stolen camels, horses, and goats, and for enough murders to have sent them to the guillotine many times. [Back to B1](#)

hearing /'hiəriŋ/ (5 occurrences)

Português: audiência; ouvir; escutando

Simple English: Ability to perceive sounds or voices through ears.

Example: *His hearing is so sharp that he can hear whispers.*

Uses in this book:

1. After hearing this, Jack begged them to bring the ape home so he could have him as a playmate. [Back to B1](#)

hell /hɛl/ (2 occurrences)

Português: inferno; diabos; droga

Simple English: The location where sinners face eternal punishment according to Christianity.

Example: *Some believe that hell is a place of unimaginable pain and suffering.*

Uses in this book:

1. "What the hell?" one of the crew said. [Back to B1](#)

hesitate /'hezɪteɪt/ (8 occurrences)

Português: hesite; duvide

Simple English: To pause before acting due to uncertainty or nervousness.

Example: *She always hesitates before making an important decision about her career.*

Forms in this book: hesitate, hesitated

Uses in this book:

1. He hesitated for a moment, then thought again of the wealth this great ape could bring if he were safely taken to a big city like London. [Back to B1](#)
2. The trainer raised his whip and hesitated for a moment at the door of the box, where the boy and the ape faced him. [Back to B1](#)

hollow /'hɒləʊ/ (3 occurrences)

Português: oco; oca; ocos

Simple English: Having an empty space inside or within something.

Example: *The tree trunk is hollow, providing a home for small animals.*

Uses in this book:

1. Tears ran down his hollow, pockmarked cheeks. [Back to B1](#)

immediate /ɪ'miːdiət/ (1 occurrence)

Português: imediata

Simple English: Happening or existing at the present instant.

Example: *There is an immediate need for help after the earthquake.*

Uses in this book:

1. Jacot recognized them immediately. [Back to B1](#)

impressed /ɪmˈprest/ (1 occurrence)

Português: impressionado; impressionou

Simple English: Admiring or respecting someone for excellent achievements or qualities.

Example: *I was impressed by his ability to solve complex problems so quickly and easily.*

Uses in this book:

1. The man was very impressed with Ajax. [Back to B1](#)

inch (3 occurrences)

Português: polegada; medida; unidade

Simple English: a unit of length equal to 2.54 centimetres

Example: *The shelf is twelve inches wide.*

Uses in this book:

1. He lit the lamp, moved the bed aside, and felt every inch of the floor. [Back to B1](#)

inform /ɪnˈfɔ:rm/ (2 occurrences)

Português: informar; avisar; comunicar

Simple English: To give information about someone or something officially.

Example: *The manager will inform the staff about the new policies tomorrow.*

Uses in this book:

1. He also kept himself informed about the police search for the ape. [Back to B1](#)

insist /ɪnˈsɪst/ (4 occurrences)

Português: insistir

Simple English: To urgently demand something or action to occur.

Example: *She will insist on meeting with the manager today about her concerns.*

Uses in this book:

1. "He was very good-tempered about it, but he insisted on pretending he was a gorilla and I was a chimpanzee trying to steal food from him. [Back to B1](#)

investigation (1 occurrence)

Português: investigação; inquérito; apuração

Simple English: a careful search for facts

Example: *The police opened an investigation.*

Uses in this book:

1. A month later, careful investigation showed that Jack left the train before it left London. [Back to B1](#)

justice /'dʒʌstɪs/ (2 occurrences)

Português: justiça; judicial; juiz

Simple English: Fair and just behavior treatment in society.

Example: *Justice is essential for a fair society where everyone is treated equally.*

Uses in this book:

1. If he had money, he might buy justice. [Back to B1](#)

Mistake /mɪ'steɪk/ (4 occurrences)

Português: erro; engano; equívoco

Simple English: An action or judgment that is incorrect or wrong.

Example: *Learning from a mistake is often more important than getting everything right.*

Uses in this book:

1. I think this was a mistake. [Back to B1](#)

mixed /mɪkst/ (4 occurrences)

Português: misto; misturado; mixado

Simple English: Consisting of different types combined together.

Example: *The salad was a mixed variety, containing both leafy greens and colorful vegetables.*

Uses in this book:

1. He mixed with the other passengers and became a favorite with the officers. [Back to B1](#)

mount /maʊnt/ (8 occurrences)

Português: montagem; montar; monte

Simple English: To increase gradually over time, especially intensity or frequency.

Example: *The tension began to mount as the deadline approached quickly.*

Forms in this book: mount, mounted

Uses in this book:

1. He gathered twelve, who saddled their horses, mounted, and rode out to meet the strangers. [Back to B1](#)

mysterious /mi'striəs/ (1 occurrence)

Português: misterioso

Simple English: Having puzzling qualities suggesting hidden motives or secrets.

Example: *The old house had a mysterious aura that intrigued the children.*

Uses in this book:

1. Like most people, his main interest was the mysterious disappearance of the killer. [Back to B1](#)

obey /ou'beɪ/ (7 occurrences)

Português: obedecer; obedecer; cumpra

Simple English: To follow rules, commands, orders given by authority.

Example: *Children must learn to obey their parents and teachers at school.*

Forms in this book: obey, obeyed

Uses in this book:

1. "If you do not obey me, you shall not go with the ape to Dover. [Back to B1](#)
2. The boy obeyed and put his hands behind him when Paulvitch told him to. [Back to B1](#)

object /əbˈdʒɛkt/ (7 occurrences)

Português: objeto; objecto; opor

Simple English: To give a fact or opinion against something.

Example: *Many members object to the new policy due to its strict regulations.*

Forms in this book: object, objected, objects

Uses in this book:

1. "It is enough that your mother objects." [Back to B1](#)

opening /ˈoʊpənɪŋ/ (5 occurrences)

Português: abertura; abrir; inauguração

Simple English: First public presentation of a play, movie, or entertainment.

Example: *The opening of the new play was attended by many celebrities.*

Uses in this book:

1. Tarzan jumped through the opening, and a moment later the room was brightly lit by a dozen electric bulbs. [Back to B1](#)

power /ˈpaʊər/ (10 occurrences)

Português: poder; potência; energia

Simple English: Energy obtained to operate machines or equipment.

Example: *Solar power is becoming a popular choice for renewable energy.*

Forms in this book: power, powers

Uses in this book:

1. I have you in my power at last. [Back to B1](#)
2. What strange creatures had he put himself in the power of? [Back to B1](#)

price /praɪs/ (1 occurrence)

Português: preço

Simple English: The amount of money something costs.

Example: *The price is too high.*

Uses in this book:

1. But Paulvitch would not say a price. [Back to B1](#)

relief /rɪˈli:f/ (8 occurrences)

Português: alívio; relevo; socorro

Simple English: Comfort after something upsetting or worrying finishes or improves.

Example: *The relief I felt when the exam was over was incredible.*

Uses in this book:

1. After he made his decision, the boy felt relief from the worry that had troubled him for many sleepless nights. [Back to B1](#)
2. Then he felt relief. [Back to B1](#)

rescue /ˈrɛskju:/ (7 occurrences)

Português: resgate; resgatar; salvamento

Simple English: To save someone or something from danger or harm.

Example: *The firefighters worked hard to rescue the cat from the tree.*

Forms in this book: rescue, rescued, rescuer

Uses in this book:

1. At last the Marjorie W. reached England, and there the officers and scientists felt sorry for the poor man they had rescued from the jungle. [Back to B1](#)

resist /rɪˈzɪst/ (2 occurrences)

Português: resistir

Simple English: To fight against something using force or effort.

Example: *She tried to resist the urge to eat the dessert on the table.*

Uses in this book:

1. You know how hard it has been for you to resist the strong wish to go back to jungle life. [Back to B1](#)

resolve /rɪˈzɑ:lʌ/ (1 occurrence)

Português: resolver; solucionar; determinação

Simple English: To find a way to solve a disagreement or problem.

Example: *They worked together to resolve the issues in their project before the deadline.*

Uses in this book:

1. He felt his resolve begin to weaken. [Back to B1](#)

root /ru:t/ (3 occurrences)

Português: raiz; radicular; torcer

Simple English: The part of a plant that grows underground to get nutrients.

Example: *The root of the plant spreads deep into the soil for stability.*

Forms in this book: root, roots

Uses in this book:

1. Captain Armand Jacot went red at the roots of his short hair. [Back to B1](#)

seat /si:t/ (2 occurrences)

Português: assento; sede; banco

Simple English: Something you sit on.

Example: *Please take a seat.*

Forms in this book: seat, seated

Uses in this book:

1. He had bought a box seat and was leaning over the rail, watching the huge ape with wide eyes. [Back to B1](#)
2. That afternoon Lord and Lady Greystoke said good-bye to their son and saw him safely seated in a first-class railway carriage that would take him to school in a few hours. [Back to B1](#)

sense /sens/ (7 occurrences)

Português: sentido; senso; sensação

Simple English: Natural ability to perceive touch, sight, taste, smell.

Example: *My sense of smell helps me enjoy food more.*

Forms in this book: sense, sensed, senses

Uses in this book:

1. Ah, if only he could go back, even for one short month - to feel the leafy branches brush against his naked hide, to smell the musty rot of dead plants that is frankincense and myrrh to the jungle-born, to sense the silent coming of the great hunters upon his trail, to hunt and be hunted, to kill! [Back to B1](#)

shade /ʃeɪd/ (4 occurrences)

Português: sombra; máscara; tonalidade

Simple English: Area blocked from sunlight, producing darkness and coolness.

Example: *We sat under the tree's shade to escape the heat.*

Forms in this book: shade, shaded

Uses in this book:

1. Paulvitch walked up and down the beach, or lay in the shade of the big trees near it. [Back to B1](#)

shape /ʃeɪp/ (8 occurrences)

Português: forma; moldar

Simple English: The form of something.

Example: *The box has a square shape.*

Forms in this book: shape, shaped

Uses in this book:

1. He also said that his wife feared their son might learn where the ape was and, because he loved the beast, might develop the wandering spirit that had shaped Tarzan's own life. [Back to B1](#)

2. Fate came in the shape of the American thief, Condon. [Back to B1](#)

soul /saʊl/ (2 occurrences)

Português: alma

Simple English: The spiritual essence of a person, considered immortal in many beliefs.

Example: *She believes that her grandmother's soul is always watching over her.*

Uses in this book:

1. When the teeth closed, Alexis Paulvitch's soul was gone. [Back to B1](#)

stage /steɪdʒ/ (5 occurrences)

Português: palco; estágio; fase

Simple English: An elevated platform where performers present plays, shows, or musical acts.

Example: *The actors will perform on the stage at 7 PM tonight.*

Uses in this book:

1. So when it was time for the ape to come back from behind the stage in answer to applause, the trainer pointed Ajax toward the box where the boy was sitting alone. [Back to B1](#)
2. The huge ape jumped from the stage to the boy's side. [Back to B1](#)
3. Ajax had stopped performing on stage after he found Tarzan. [Back to B1](#)
4. No amount of persuasion could make him go on stage again, and when the trainer once tried force, he was lucky to escape alive. [Back to B1](#)
5. He blamed that refusal directly on Tarzan and finally convinced himself that the ape man had told the great ape not to go on stage. [Back to B1](#)

steady /'stedi/ (3 occurrences)

Português: constante; firme; estável

Simple English: Not changing significantly over time.

Example: *She maintained a steady pace while running during the marathon event.*

Uses in this book:

1. He put a hand on the floor to steady himself. [Back to B1](#)

stretch /stretʃ/ (10 occurrences)

Português: esticar; estiramento; trecho

Simple English: To extend body or body parts to full length.

Example: *Before running, it is important to stretch your muscles properly.*

Uses in this book:

1. There, a strange man stood screaming at them in a cracked high voice, with thin arms stretched out. [Back to B1](#)
2. His long legs were stretched out in front of him, and his spurs were buried in the sandy ground of a small desert oasis. [Back to B1](#)

3. The sun had not set yet, but the shadows of the few trees around the water hole and of his men and horses stretched far east across the golden sand.

[Back to B1](#)

strict /strikt/ (2 occurrences)

Português: estrita; rigoroso; rígidas

Simple English: Absolute rules that must always be obeyed.

Example: *The school has strict rules about student behavior during classes.*

Uses in this book:

1. And sometimes, Jane, I think you are too strict in trying to protect him. [Back to B1](#)

2. They were free for a while from strict discipline and relaxed their tired muscles, laughing, joking, and smoking as they got ready to eat after twelve hours without food. [Back to B1](#)

struggle /'strʌgəl/ (21 occurrences)

Português: luta; lutar; esforço

Simple English: A great effort to fight back or break free.

Example: *He had to struggle against the strong current to swim back to the shore.*

Forms in this book: struggle, struggled, struggling

Uses in this book:

1. Mr. Moore struggled, but it did no good. [Back to B1](#)

2. Mr. Moore twisted and struggled on the bed. [Back to B1](#)

3. He struggled, but it was useless. [Back to B1](#)

4. He struggled wildly to shake off the boy and turn on the creature behind him. [Back to B1](#)

subject /səb'dʒekt/ (3 occurrences)

Português: assunto; sujeito; objecto

Simple English: The topic being discussed or studied.

Example: *History is my favorite subject.*

Forms in this book: subject, subjects

Uses in this book:

1. What worries me is that he seems to have no interest at all in the subjects we study. [Back to B1](#)
2. But Lady Greystoke only shook her head, as she had done many times before when this subject came up. [Back to B1](#)

tear /tɪər/ (12 occurrences)

Português: lágrima; rasgo; rasgar

Simple English: Drop of salty liquid produced by the eyes naturally.

Example: *A tear rolled down her cheek during the sad movie.*

Forms in this book: tear, tearing, Tears

Uses in this book:

1. Tears ran down his hollow, pockmarked cheeks. [Back to B1](#)

threat /θrɛt/ (5 occurrences)

Português: ameaça

Simple English: Something posing danger or potential harm.

Example: *The storm was a serious threat to the coastal community.*

Forms in this book: threat, threats

Uses in this book:

1. Paulvitch saw no threat in its eyes or in its posture. [Back to B1](#)
2. He had changed from a cold, clever, highly intelligent evil man into a dangerous threat with the confused mind of a broken person. [Back to B1](#)

threaten /'θrɛtn/ (12 occurrences)

Português: ameaçar

Simple English: To declare intention to harm if demands are unmet.

Example: *They threaten to cancel the event if the conditions are not met.*

Forms in this book: threaten, threatened, threatening

Uses in this book:

1. Paulvitch jumped around the angry, cursing group, begging, screaming, and threatening them. [Back to B1](#)
2. He came back to the box, but when he threatened Ajax with it, he faced two angry enemies instead of one. [Back to B1](#)

trip /trɪp/ (10 occurrences)

Português: viagem; desengate; tropeçar

Simple English: A journey.

Example: *We took a trip to Rome.*

Forms in this book: trip, tripped

Uses in this book:

1. During the first days of the trip back, he was often found nosing around different parts of the ship. [Back to B1](#)
2. At the dock and during the trip to London, the Russian had his hands full with Ajax. [Back to B1](#)
3. "I will show you how to tie the ape if he shows signs of rebelling during the trip." [Back to B1](#)
4. He cursed angrily, turned his prisoner around, tripped him, and threw him hard to the floor. [Back to B1](#)

tropical /ˈtrɒpɪkl/ (1 occurrence)

Português: tropical

Simple English: Very warm and humid weather often with lots of rain.

Example: *The tropical climate in the region makes it perfect for growing bananas.*

Uses in this book:

1. They looked wild and ancient, and they fit the tropical jungle behind them. [Back to B1](#)

unconscious /ʌnˈkɒnʃəs/ (6 occurrences)

Português: inconsciente; desmaiado; subconsciente

Simple English: Unresponsive and unaware of surroundings, usually from an injury.

Example: *He was unconscious after the fall and required immediate medical attention.*

Uses in this book:

1. At the bottom of the door lay the unconscious body of Mr. Moore, and the door fell on him with a loud crash. [Back to B1](#)

urge /ɜːrdʒ/ (7 occurrences)

Português: exortar; instar; impulso

Simple English: To strongly recommend or encourage someone to take action.

Example: *I urge you to apply for that scholarship before the deadline.*

Forms in this book: urge, urged, urging

Uses in this book:

1. At once, he changed his mind and did not act on the urge. [Back to B1](#)

victory /ˈvɪktəri/ (5 occurrences)

Português: vitória; triunfo

Simple English: Success achieved in war, competition, or other contest.

Example: *The victory in the final race brought joy to the entire team.*

Forms in this book: victories, victory

Uses in this book:

1. Then he stood on top of me and gave a terrible scream, which he said was the victory cry of a bull ape. [Back to B1](#)

wealth (2 occurrences)

Português: riqueza; fortuna; bens

Simple English: a large amount of money or valuable things

Example: *The family gained wealth through trade.*

Uses in this book:

1. He hesitated for a moment, then thought again of the wealth this great ape could bring if he were safely taken to a big city like London. [Back to B1](#)

wrap /ræp/ (6 occurrences)

Português: envoltório; embrulhar; enrole

Simple English: To cover an object in paper, fabric, or material.

Example: *I will wrap the gift carefully before the party starts.*

Forms in this book: wrap, wrapped

Uses in this book:

1. Then it turned, wrapped the cord around its hands like a man, and pulled hard backward. [Back to B1](#)